



*A Revolution  
Without Dancing  
is a Revolution  
Not Worth Having!*



Jesus defines those who wear His Name:

*"By this all will know that you are my disciples,  
if you have love for one another."*

JOHN 13:35

How those early disciples were perceived:

*"...These who have turned the world  
upside down have come here too."*

ACTS 17:6





*A Revolution  
Without Dancing  
is a Revolution  
Not Worth Having!*

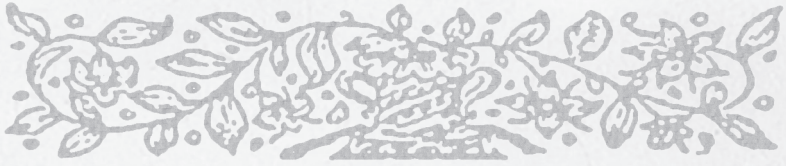
As always, if we can help you in any way, please contact the church here at:  
P.O. Box 68309, Indianapolis, IN 46268 USA  
or by email at [RealPeople@JesusLifeTogether.com](mailto:RealPeople@JesusLifeTogether.com)

**[www.RevolutionDancing.com](http://www.RevolutionDancing.com)**  
**[www.HouseChurch.com](http://www.HouseChurch.com)**

©2008 [RealPeople@JesusLifeTogether.com](mailto:RealPeople@JesusLifeTogether.com)

Copyright laws, as crazy as they are when we are talking about God's Word, require us to say the following: This material is copyrighted and may not be quoted or reproduced without its complete context (the entire document) except by the author's permission. You may, however, freely reproduce this in its entirety. And, of course, this publication is never to be "sold" for any price (2 Corinthians 2:17, Matthew 10:8)

Scripture quotations are taken from various translations, including: Holy Bible Greek Text, Bible Society, London England, Literal Translation, Jay P. Green, Hendrickson, © 1976, 1985. All rights reserved. Also, Hebrew-Greek Bible, © 1985. Zodiates, Baker Book House. All rights reserved. Also, Holy Bible, New International Version, New American Standard Version, Amplified Version, © 1973, 1978, 1984, 1997, 1999. International Bible Society, Zondervan. All rights reserved. Also from: Holy Bible, New Living Translation, © 1996, Tyndale House Publishers, Inc. All rights reserved. Also, Holy Bible, New King James Version, © 1997, Thomas Nelson Publishers. All rights reserved. And, Holy Bible, The King James Version, © 1978, The Southwestern Company..



# *Contents*

- 1 The Blood and Leaven*
- 7 On the Topic of “Disfellowship”...*
- 11 Desiring God’s Ways, Only*
- 17 Listening for His Melody*
- 25 What is “Not” DisFellowship?*
- 31 Vive La Difference!*
- 45 Painting Stripes Doesn’t Change the Species*
- 57 Inescapably Daddy’s Heart*
- 65 Even BABY Chritions Know This, and Live It*
- 85 He Ordained Pruning to Make  
His Garden Healthy and Beautiful!*
- 93 Pruning, DisKoinonia—  
How is it Implemented, Biblically?*
- 105 Twisted Tale of Wheat and Tares*
- 113 In a Lampstand*
- 121 Lost Life and Glory*
- 129 Who Wold Even WANT “a Clean Stal”?!*
- 139 Real LIFE Stories*
- 157 “And None Dared Join Them”*
- 167 Different Kinds of Soil,  
Different Kinds of Responses*
- 193 All for Now*





# *The Blood and Leaven*

## *A Preface...*

**A**ncient Egypt is widely known amongst archeologists and historians for its countless and diverse technological innovations, discoveries, and inventions. While of itself this isn't a negative reputation, God, YHWH, the Creator of our small planet, has used this same "Egypt" in the Bible as a symbolic "type" of the fallen world system. By His Oath, we also know this: The world system, in its arrogant defiance of His Ways and Commands, is His enemy.

In view of Father's choice of the word "Egypt" to foreshadow His judgment of the rebellious, proud, independent, bellicose world system, it is not surprising to discover that one of the "technological discoveries" that Egypt birthed a thousand years before the pyramids... was the use of "leaven" in bread-making.

"Leaven in the batch," technically, is the fermenting acidic corruption caused by fungi or bacteria, or foreign substance, introduced into a batch of bread dough. This foreign matter reacts, reproduces, and consumes within the dough, spreading voraciously within the batch. This reaction causes gas to be released, and a matrix structure is formed, completely altering the state of the dough. The "foam" resulting as the "dough rises" and then bakes is often considered more "palatable"—"lighter" and "softer" and "easier to tear into small pieces for consumption."

Egypt, the world system, brought leaven to the world as a way to make bread easier to tear apart—to fill it with gas, and soft foam. “Egypt” brought this “leaven” into proximity of God’s People. The “leaven” of “friendship with the world” and its idols and pleasures and bonds has given God’s People a choice. Do we accept in God’s House the spreading, fermenting “shadow” of leaven—the spreading fungi and bacteria of alien life-form worldliness and sin generally ascribed to the word “leaven” in the Bible? Or will God’s true People heed God’s plea and command to rid the House of leaven? Will we choose, as He commands, to reject the introduction of alien organisms that “soften” Truth in order to make God’s House more “palatable,” but changes its very substance to something unacceptable to God?

It is Satan’s goal to diminish the Life of Jesus in His People. This, of course, allows the unBelieving world to rightfully be repulsed at the hypocrisy and lukewarmness they see “in the church.” When “church-attenders” they personally know from their workplace or neighborhood are totally unlike Jesus, who could blame the average person for wanting nothing to do with that “religion”? Most of what the common person has seen in “christendom” is little more than money begging and pressure, and hawking religious wares—such as marketing and selling books, music, pot-holders, plaques, and sermons, while promoting and filling the bank accounts of mere humans. This is all not appreciably different today than with the “buyers and sellers” Jesus drove out of His House with a whip. And then there are the televised magic shows with sleight of hand and group mindlessness, rather than holiness and God’s Love and power. And all of the above is emotionally greased with entertainment steeped in hypocrisy, if one were to know much of the true stories of studios, entertainers, and the insiders’ industry. This business is very unlike Jesus of Nazareth, our Messiah and King, or the church of Acts 2:42-47 and 1Cor.12.

All of that said, it would SURELY take more than “two scoops of crazy on their Sunday Morning cereal” to get the average unBeliever with integrity and intelligence to “buy into” a “church” (loosely defined) that has been marketed by name as being “like Jesus” when it is not.

By contrast, “this is HOW all men will know you are My disciples”—by the Quality of Life and Love the unBelievers SEE among you, according to Jesus Himself (John 13-15). If folks actually see a part of Him—a visible, Biblical, Living, daily, vibrant church that looks like Jesus—perhaps Jesus might be very attractive to that same otherwise skeptical unBeliever. We

## *Preface*

can surely understand now that it is not by accident that God forbids leaven in His Church (1Cor.5). Moreover, to prepare us for this Truth (1Cor.10:1-11, Heb.3:7-10:39), He has historically forbidden leaven in the “shadow” Covenant, the Old Testament, in all burnt sacrifices to Him.

Likewise and very remarkably, it is no accident that leaven **MUST** be removed from the house, on the day of the Passover. As you recall, this is that great and terrible and awesome day the Death Angel would “Pass Over” God’s People, showing them favor. In order to find this unmerited favor, God Commanded both the Lamb’s Blood on the doorpost **AND** the removal of all leaven from a house that would desire Salvation from the Black Angel’s curse of death. Not “either” but “both.”

Why would God Command both the Lamb’s Blood **AND** the removal of all leaven from the house of those who would be His People? There are many “teachers” (Acts 20:30-31) who for reasons of pride, power, and pesos “forget” to tell one part, or the other, of this Story. Both are essential to God’s Heart and Word.

And now, in both the Old Covenant and New, any house desiring protection from the Destroyer will be very thorough in **BOTH** placing the Blood of the Lamb on the doorpost, **AND** removing the leaven from within the house. The Blood of the Lamb and the removal of leaven from the House are absolutely linked by God Himself. Mere humans cannot arbitrarily make up their own “doctrines” to emphasize the Blood, while rebelling against other things **GOD** said. Some prefer to ignore leaven (careless love of the world or willful sins) in His House. Some erroneously and unBiblically claim, “the Blood covers our refusal to love and obey our Father. It doesn’t matter what **GOD** has Commanded, we are not required to deal with the leaven in the House. God made a mistake. God must not understand the Blood on the doorpost.” Others, focus on leaven removal, in their lives and others, and think somehow “being good enough” will influence Salvation in some way. These do not truly trust and embrace the Blood of the Lamb as their all in all. Subsequently, this neglect of “the washing of Regeneration” and the Reconciliation of Jesus’ Blood, can only live in a Lifeless legalism and empty form of religion. This place, too, is powerless. Without complete reliance on the Blood of Jesus as our **ONLY** standing, good days or bad, before the Father we have and are nothing. “Clothed in Christ” is where our full weight must be placed, and remain, as our only hope. Washed in His Blood, we live in full and complete confidence.

It's not "either/or" but both, saith the Lord. Most forms of religion prefer to choose between these two Truths, regarding the Blood on the doorpost and the dealing with leaven in the house. Many, even "teachers," cannot understand the riches of God's Word that calls us to "both" full weight on the Blood, AND removal of leaven from the House, as the Scriptures teach. And yet, this is KEY to our future as the "Bride makes herself ready" for the Return of her Groom, Jesus. "The Spirit AND the Bride say, 'Come!'" He has given us a role. He "will soon crush satan under OUR feet" (Rom.16:20, 25-27). This was not a "typographical" error in the Scriptures, any more than John 3:16 or any Truth of the Word of God. It all makes sense Together.

And, as the Word of God testifies, the Lamb's Blood and the removal of leaven from the House are inextricably linked in the Word and Ways of God—by His wisdom and love—forever. (Lev.2:11, 6:17, Exo.12, Josh.5:10-12, 1Cor.5:6-8, Gal.5:9, James 4:4, Rom.12:1-2, 2Cor.6:14-7:1.)

Of course there are always consequences when we think we know more than God about what "grace" means, or make up doctrines about how the "Blood" infers we can refuse to deal with leaven, in spite of what God said about the matter. The Hebrews writer speaks much of the Blood, and yet Hebrews 6 and the last half of Hebrews 10 came from the same writer, and the same Spirit. "Conforming to the patterns of the world" and "loving the world and the things of the world" WILL invite the Destroyer, as surely as does refusing the skandalon of the Blood of the Lamb as our only hope. As in the parable of the Soils, Father knows that the leaven of the world and its loves and lusts will "choke" and kill the hearts and minds of those who might have lived and prospered and borne fruit, even in what seems to be only a "partially" leavened batch. In refusing the Blood or leaving the leaven in the House against His Desire and Command, the Dark one will start by destroying the firstborn, and then consume the rest of the family. Claiming "Blood on the doorpost" while ignoring HIS concurrent Call in the Scriptures to remove leaven, love of the world, and conformity to the priorities and ways of the world, is to invite Death. This must be painfully obvious to an honest observer of the religious world in this generation. As surely as removal of leaven *without* the Blood of the Lamb is *useless*, so also it is a lethal malignancy for one to claim Blood on the Doorpost while refusing or lethargically ignoring His Command to remove leaven from His House. This would be very unwise, to put it mildly.

## *Preface*

“A little leaven leavens the WHOLE batch.”

As we offer ourselves in the Firstborn, Y’shua, to have His Blood on the doorpost, we must also recall that no fewer than twelve times in five New Testament Books, there is the repeated Command to remove leaven from our lives and the House. Understand this as we grapple Together with God’s Wisdom in vitally connecting the Lamb’s Blood with removal of leaven: God is not “legalistic,” but is infinitely wise and full of love. His “yoke is easy, and burden light.” Our best in honoring Him will “work together for our Good,” as we remain fully dependent on His Blood, and likewise fully desirous of His Will. The tension in this passionate meshing of these Truths will press us into the Most Holy Place with our shoes off, that we may all be “conformed to the family image of the Son” (Rom.8:28-29).

We are “made Perfect, and being made useful, set apart, holy” (Heb.10:12-39) to the praise of His Glory. The Blood of the Firstborn on the doorpost... is also our call to remove the leaven from the House, saith the Lord.



# Chapter 1



## On the Topic of “Disfellowship” ...

**D**isfellowship is one of many Truths of God that we find to be both clear and mandatory in the Scriptures. And, as such, this “scary topic” of “disFellowship” is beyond question part of God’s Heart. Why would we have any motivation to ignore, disobey, or rationalize away something that is part of the very heart and mind of the One to whom we have abandoned ourselves in love? Of course we would never desire to pull away or choose self-love, self-preservation, or men’s foolish ways over our Father’s ways. “*We make it our goal to please Him*” (Col.1:10<sup>1</sup>, 2Cor.5:9<sup>2</sup>).

By definition, God and His Word are intimately intertwined (John1<sup>3</sup>). And, remember, God even defines<sup>4</sup> Himself as “Love” (though HIS definition of “love” is galaxies beyond our emotional and impotent definitions of love). We must then pause to be impressed with, rather than intimidated by, God’s Concept of “disFellowship”—as well as all other New Testament Truths that may “bother” our flesh, initially. Because “*God is Love*,” this dangerous<sup>5</sup> topic of “disFellowship” is a GIFT to us, and a marvelous benefit to His Purposes amongst men—when understood properly and lived out together in His organic and creative Way. Even “disFellowship,” as it is taught in the Bible, is a Holy and beautiful Tool for accomplishing His Purposes. This is also reinforced and illustrated throughout the

sixty years of writing and daily Life recorded by the Holy Spirit in the New Testament.

Now this next statement is unfortunate, but the accuracy of it is undeniable. Tens of thousands of testimonies and miles for over twenty years say that this next statement is true: Laodicean christendom, whether in living rooms or cathedral, storefront or warehouse, underground or above ground—generally always ignores or defies clear Scripture regarding “disFellowship.” One would suppose this would happen out of fear of God’s ways, or lack of knowledge of them, or lack of love of His Ways. And, this willing denial of His Commands and Ways happens on other “topics,” too. “That’s not practical.” “That was for then.” “Get the log out of your own eye.” That and other such smoke screens to hide disObedience are commonplace. Unfortunately, most of the religious world ignores God’s Word on marriage, child rearing, love of the world, clergyism, and numerous other “inconvenient truths.” If they only knew what they were costing *themselves* by second-guessing God and eating from the “Tree” of their own desire to be “gods, knowing good and evil” by their own human “wisdom” and desires.

As we journey into the topic of what disFellowship isn’t, what it is, and what the practical will then be in real live situations, one thing will stand out, and that is this: The really fun part of discussing disFellowship is that we are “forced” to spend most of our time talking about FELLOWSHIP. The Dance. ☺

---

## *Chapter 1 Footnotes*

### **<sup>1</sup>Colossians 1:10**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

so that you will walk in a manner worthy of the Lord, to please Him in all respects, bearing fruit in every good work and increasing in the knowledge of God;

#### *God’s Word Translation*

We ask this so that you will live the kind of lives that prove you belong to the Lord. Then you will want to please him in every way as you grow in producing every kind of good work by this knowledge about God.

#### *King James Bible*

That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;

#### *Bible in Basic English*

Living uprightly in the approval of the Lord, giving fruit in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;

*Darby Bible Translation*

so as to walk worthily of the Lord unto all well-pleasing, bearing fruit in every good work, and growing by the true knowledge of God;

**<sup>2</sup>2 Corinthians 5:9**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Therefore we also have as our ambition, whether at home or absent, to be pleasing to Him.

*God's Word Translation*

Whether we live in the body or move out of it, our goal is to be pleasing to him.

*King James Bible*

Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

**<sup>3</sup>John 1:1-14**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

<sup>2</sup>He was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. <sup>4</sup>In Him was life, and the life was the light of men.

<sup>5</sup>And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.

<sup>6</sup>There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. <sup>7</sup>This man came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all through him might believe. <sup>8</sup>He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light. <sup>9</sup>That was the true Light which gives light to every man coming into the world.

<sup>10</sup>He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him. <sup>11</sup>He came to His own, and His own did not receive Him. <sup>12</sup>But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name: <sup>13</sup>who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

<sup>14</sup>And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

**<sup>4</sup>1 John 4:8**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

The one who does not love does not know God, for God is love.

*God's Word Translation*

The person who doesn't love doesn't know God, because God is love.

*King James Bible*

He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.

*Bible in Basic English*

He who has no love has no knowledge of God, because God is love.

*Darby Bible Translation*

He that loves not has not known God; for God is love.

**<sup>5</sup>Matthew 24:9**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Then they will deliver you to tribulation, and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name.

*God's Word Translation*

Then they will hand you over to those who will torture and kill you. All nations will hate you because you are committed to me.

*King James Bible*

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

*Bible in Basic English*

Then they will be cruel to you, and will put you to death: and you will be hated by all nations because of my name.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Then shall they deliver you up to tribulation, and shall kill you; and ye will be hated of all the nations for my name's sake.

## Chapter 2



# Desiring God's Ways, Only

**C**an we start by agreeing that it would be a rrrreally bad idea to just make up our own “convenient” form of “christianity” and “church”—ignoring and disobeying things God said in the process? Bad idea, right? But, men with something personally to gain or lose do that very thing all the time! Bummer, eh?

To use one tidy little illustration, to show the gall of humans, let's talk just for a moment about the “religious title” thing. To call men by religious titles—in the religious world of men—is nearly omnipresent and ubiquitous. Often they will even dress and enunciate in some way that will draw attention as to how “spiritual” they must be. You see it from where they “platform” themselves on “Sunday morning” and by whether they can be sat down at any time, because Jesus is Head, not them. (“*When revelation comes to the second, let the first one<sup>1</sup> sit down.*”) How COULD it be that men are SO willing to “title” and “be titled”, as one little-bitty example of a Principle—when it is so blatantly disobedient to the Word of their Master and Maker, Jesus? How common is it? “Churches” by the tens of thousands dare to wear Jesus’ Name, and then totally defy Commands of Jesus Himself that forbid “titles.” It is so commonplace it is frightening. “Pastor So-and-so,” “Reverend So-and-so,” “Brother So-and-so,” “Elder So-and-so,” “Father So-and-so.” Wow. To rebel against His clear Command...

is to rebel against Jesus' Holiness, and His right to be King among us. All of Heaven is aghast at the gall.

The "topic" of the actual Command doesn't even matter. It is WHO Commanded that matters. Whether the Command is "thou shalt not murder" or "thou shalt not call mere men by religious titles," or "thou shalt not gossip" makes no difference. To rebel against what Jesus and the Scriptures say in plain language is to make oneself a god, and to reject Jesus Himself. *"If you love Me, you will obey Me."* Jesus has strictly forbidden<sup>2</sup> calling men by titles or elevating them on a holy platform, separating them in any way as a "special" religious man or woman. *"If you love Me, you will obey Me."*

It should be the simplest matter on earth, then, to discontinue this "religious title" practice of men's religions, whether roman catholic—or the protestant version of roman catholic practices. This is not only rebellion against Jesus, but yields terrible fruit. Everyone pays a huge price for this sin, whether those "titled" or everyone else not so "titled." Other "religions" and organizations and governments do this "title" thing—and that is fine for any human organization or religion of men. The buddhists, muslims, hindus—pretty much all of man's religions and superstitions have medicine men, most of them with "titles" in a special "class"—those who are allegedly "more knowledgeable" or "more dedicated" or "special." But, as Jesus Himself said clearly, NOT SO WITH YOU. If we are His<sup>3</sup>, we will cease and desist from such human and disobedient sorts of flesh-practices, as they are not His Heart.

Why would men desire and conspire to ignore or defy God's Word on this, or any topic? Because pretty much all such "minor variations" are intentional, and facilitate building an alternate empire that makes some men rich and powerful on \$13 million book signing bonuses and \$50 million annual incomes. Meanwhile, most of God's People are simultaneously robbed of their dignity and growth by relegating them to an unBiblical paradigm of "laity" instead of Priests. Those with genuine Gifts from God are often conned by the system and betrayed by their own pride and ambition to become "clergy"—and violate Jesus and His People in the process. There are many such matters of Importance to God which are brushed aside when men are attempting to fit God into a box of convenience, rather than offering their bodies as a living sacrifice. The Priorities<sup>4</sup> with which Jesus lived IN His Father while here physically must be ours. The Tree<sup>5</sup> which grew out of His Life here can and must also embrace His passion

## Chapter 2

for obedience if we are to find and bring joy to Father's heart. Anytime we despise, or ignore, or refuse what the BIBLE says on a topic, we will be revealed as nothing more than a teetering tower of rotting planks, built upon loose sand<sup>6</sup>. The "house" may look pretty for a while, but it cannot stand the test of storms that "will come," according to Jesus.

This willingness to disregard the Teachings of Jesus and the Scriptures by those who "*do not hear the VOICE of the prophets who are read*"<sup>7</sup> is something we should tolerate amongst ourselves no longer. Whether regarding "titles" or "child rearing" or the nature of the Church<sup>8</sup> in the Bible... or disFellowship and other topics—this willingness to allow ourselves to ignore God's Truth must change if we desire to please Jesus and be part of what He is Doing. The penalty and high price for ignoring God and borrowing "the Philistines' oxcart" has been too destructive to marriages and teens and families, and to the Testimony of Jesus that is almost entirely absent in the "churches"<sup>9</sup> of this generation.

### Chapter 2 Footnotes

#### <sup>1</sup>1 Corinthians 14:30

##### *New American Standard Bible*

But if a revelation is made to another who is seated, the first one must keep silent.

##### *God's Word Translation*

If God reveals something to another person who is seated, the first speaker should be silent.

##### *King James Bible*

If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

##### *Bible in Basic English*

But if a revelation is given to another who is seated near, let the first be quiet.

##### *Darby Bible Translation*

But if there be a revelation to another sitting there, let the first be silent.

#### <sup>2</sup>Matthew 23:5-15

##### *Amplified Bible*

<sup>5</sup>They do all their works to be seen of men; for they make wide their phylacteries (small cases enclosing certain Scripture passages, worn during prayer on the left arm and forehead) and make long their fringes [worn by all male Israelites, according to the command].

<sup>6</sup>And they take pleasure in and [thus] love the place of honor at feasts and the best seats in the synagogues,

<sup>7</sup>And to be greeted with honor in the marketplaces and to have people call them rabbi.

A REVOLUTION WITHOUT DANCING IS A REVOLUTION NOT WORTH HAVING!

<sup>8</sup>But you are not to be called rabbi (teacher), for you have one Teacher and you are all brothers.

<sup>9</sup>And do not call anyone [in the church] on earth father, for you have one Father, Who is in heaven.

<sup>10</sup>And you must not be called masters (leaders), for you have one Master (Leader), the Christ.

<sup>11</sup>He who is greatest among you shall be your servant.

<sup>12</sup>Whoever exalts himself [with haughtiness and empty pride] shall be humbled (brought low), and whoever humbles himself [whoever has a modest opinion of himself and behaves accordingly] shall be raised to honor.

<sup>13</sup>But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, pretenders (hypocrites)! For you shut the kingdom of heaven in men's faces; for you neither enter yourselves, nor do you allow those who are about to go in to do so.

<sup>14</sup>Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, pretenders (hypocrites)! For you swallow up widows' houses and for a pretense to cover it up make long prayers; therefore you will receive the greater condemnation and the heavier sentence.

<sup>15</sup>Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, pretenders (hypocrites)! For you travel over sea and land to make a single proselyte, and when he becomes one [a proselyte], you make him doubly as much a child of hell (Gehenna) as you are.

**<sup>31</sup> Peter 2:7-11**

*New King James Version*

<sup>7</sup>Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient,

“The stone which the builders rejected  
Has become the chief cornerstone,”

<sup>8</sup>and

“A stone of stumbling  
And a rock of offense.”

They stumble, being disobedient to the word, to which they also were appointed.

<sup>9</sup>But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; <sup>10</sup>who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy.

<sup>11</sup>Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul,

**<sup>4</sup>Do not seek to follow in the footsteps of men of old. But DO Seek what they sought.**

Picture found at [www.JesusistheOne.com/Seek](http://www.JesusistheOne.com/Seek)

**<sup>5</sup>Luke 23:31**

*New American Standard Bible*

For if they do these things when the tree is green, what will happen when it is dry?"

*God's Word Translation*

If people do this to a green tree, what will happen to a dry one?"

*King James Bible*

For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

*Bible in Basic English*

For if they do these things when the tree is green, what will they do when it is dry?

*Darby Bible Translation*

For if these things are done in the green tree, what shall take place in the dry?

**<sup>6</sup>Matthew 7:21-28**

---

*New International Version*

<sup>21</sup>"Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and in your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?' <sup>23</sup>Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!'"

<sup>24</sup>"Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. <sup>25</sup>The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. <sup>26</sup>But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. <sup>27</sup>The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash."

<sup>28</sup>When Jesus had finished saying these things, the crowds were amazed at his teaching,

**<sup>7</sup>Acts 13:27**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For those who live in Jerusalem, and their rulers, recognizing neither Him nor the utterances of the prophets which are read every Sabbath, fulfilled these by condemning Him.

*God's Word Translation*

The people who live in Jerusalem and their rulers didn't know who Jesus was. They didn't understand the prophets' messages, which are read every day of worship. So they condemned Jesus and fulfilled what the prophets had said.

*King James Bible*

For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him.

*Bible in Basic English*

For the men of Jerusalem and their rulers, having no knowledge of him, or of the sayings of the prophets which come to their ears every Sabbath day, gave effect to them by judging him.

*Darby Bible Translation*

for those who dwell in Jerusalem, and their rulers, not having known him, have fulfilled also the voices of the prophets which are read on every sabbath, by judging him.

<sup>8</sup>[www.HouseChurch.com](http://www.HouseChurch.com)

---

<sup>9</sup>**Revelation 2:5**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Therefore remember from where you have fallen, and repent and do the deeds you did at first; or else I am coming to you and will remove your lampstand out of its place—unless you repent.

*God's Word Translation*

Remember how far you have fallen. Return to me and change the way you think and act, and do what you did at first. I will come to you and take your lamp stand from its place if you don't change.

*King James Bible*

Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

*Bible in Basic English*

So keep in mind where you were at first, and be changed in heart and do the first works; or I will come to you, and will take away your light from its place, if your hearts are not changed.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works: but if not, I am coming to thee, and I will remove thy lamp out of its place, except thou shalt repent.

## Chapter 3



# Listening for His Melody

**H**ere's the thing. We can't DANCE with Him in His Joyful Dance... if we don't love and listen to His Music. It's not a "bad" or "dangerous" thing, really, to do it HIS way, regardless of what men's logic and fears and pride would often dictate. Men's wisdom<sup>1</sup> *only* leads to the bad fruit of chaos, division, and heartache. "*Times of refreshing come from repentance*" and "*He came to BLESS us by turning us from our wicked ways*" (Acts 3<sup>2</sup>). Those who LOVE Jesus will always cherish<sup>3</sup> His Word, and know that we cannot have HIM while ignoring or disobeying, or "knowing better" than God's Word<sup>4</sup>. Thus, these few lines below about this oft-ignored or hated topic of "disFellowship" are to discuss what is truly *a Part of God Himself*<sup>5</sup>. Though these Truths are unpopular or scorned by Laodicean "lukewarm"<sup>6</sup> religion, they remain in the Scriptures and part of Father's Heart.

This matter is often brushed aside or rationalized away as God being apparently unloving or unmerciful. But, the reality is that men's personal power, popularity, and pesos will all take a major "hit" when God is obeyed on this topic, for the same reason Jesus was killed. The cultural christendom of the day wants Acts 2-8 Power, but wants to skip Acts 5 and Acts 7-8 to get there. The Holiness and Courage of those men and women demonstrated in Acts 5 is part of the Dance. If it's to be His Music we're dancing to in this grand Together-Life He has left us as an Inheritance, the Bride<sup>7</sup> will offer this Holiness and Courage and Love and Obedience back to Him as Dowry for Jesus!

Unpopular and Inconvenient Truths or not, if we desire what Jesus desires for His Church, we will pay the price of “everything” for the Pearl, as He said we must. And, as we position ourselves in that Way, we’ll find these Truths about “disFellowship” to be Essential to God’s Heart. They are even inGeniusly Designed by the Master to build His Church that “the Gates of Hell can no longer prevail against.” Obeying<sup>8</sup> is a good thing, a precious privilege and way to offer gifts to Jesus—not a burden. We do, after all, belong<sup>9</sup> to Him, the Head and the Living Word, Jesus Christ.

And so, as we carefully discuss this topic of “disFellowship,” hold on to the thought that we’ll never have New Testament LIFE and POWER... unless we embrace and walk in His Ways. “*The one who says he abides in Christ, must<sup>10</sup> walk as He walked.*” It’s just the Deal. Jesus living Inside of us, you know? And so His Words and Ways are not grievous to us, nor will we rationalize them away based on culture or cost. He IS<sup>11</sup> the Word, and we can’t have Him while ignoring or defying<sup>12</sup> the practice of His Words—no matter how unpopular this may become.

On this Point we must choose between God and cultural religion. Remember, “No man is above his Teacher” and this obedience and propagation of culturally-unpopular Truth resulted in the premeditated assassination<sup>13</sup> of the only perfect and truly loving Man ever to walk this earth, Jesus Christ. This topic, contained in the lines below, chafes man’s flesh similarly, for the same reasons, in this same death-defying strata<sup>14</sup>.

The really precious foundation under all such things is that we REALLY have nothing to prove, or own, or have<sup>15</sup>, or build... He is just calling us to be FAITHFUL, and leave the product and fruit of that simple faithfulness to HIM<sup>16</sup>.

---

### Chapter 3 Footnotes

#### **<sup>1</sup>James 3:14-4:4**

*New King James Version*

<sup>14</sup>But if you have bitter envy and self-seeking in your hearts, do not boast and lie against the truth. <sup>15</sup>This wisdom does not descend from above, but is earthly, sensual, demonic.

<sup>16</sup>For where envy and self-seeking exist, confusion and every evil thing are there. <sup>17</sup>But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, willing to yield, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality and without hypocrisy. <sup>18</sup>Now the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by those who make peace.

<sup>1</sup>Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure that war in your members? <sup>2</sup>You lust and do not have. You murder and covet and cannot obtain. You fight and war. Yet you do not have because you do not ask. <sup>3</sup>You ask and

do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. <sup>4</sup>Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

**<sup>2</sup>Acts 3:19-26**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>19</sup>Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord, <sup>20</sup>and that He may send Jesus Christ, who was preached to you before, <sup>21</sup>whom heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. <sup>22</sup>For Moses truly said to the fathers, 'The LORD your God will raise up for you a Prophet like me from your brethren. Him you shall hear in all things, whatever He says to you.' <sup>23</sup>And it shall be that every soul who will not hear that Prophet shall be utterly destroyed from among the people.' <sup>24</sup>Yes, and all the prophets, from Samuel and those who follow, as many as have spoken, have also foretold these days. <sup>25</sup>You are sons of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, 'And in your seed all the families of the earth shall be blessed.' <sup>26</sup>To you first, God, having raised up His Servant Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from your iniquities."

**<sup>3</sup>Psalms 119**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>1</sup>Blessed are the undefiled in the way,  
Who walk in the law of the LORD!  
<sup>2</sup>Blessed are those who keep His testimonies,  
Who seek Him with the whole heart!  
<sup>3</sup>They also do no iniquity;  
They walk in His ways.  
<sup>35</sup>Make me walk in the path of Your commandments,  
For I delight in it.  
<sup>72</sup>The law of Your mouth is better to me  
Than thousands of coins of gold and silver.  
<sup>97</sup>Oh, how I love Your law!  
It is my meditation all the day.  
<sup>103</sup>How sweet are Your words to my taste,  
Sweeter than honey to my mouth!  
<sup>104</sup>Through Your precepts I get understanding;  
Therefore I hate every false way.  
<sup>127</sup>Therefore I love Your commandments  
More than gold, yes, than fine gold!  
<sup>147</sup>I rise before the dawning of the morning,  
And cry for help; I hope in Your word.  
<sup>148</sup>My eyes are awake through the night watches,  
That I may meditate on Your word.  
<sup>174</sup>I long for Your salvation, O LORD,  
And Your law is my delight.

#### **<sup>4</sup>John 12:48**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

“He who rejects Me and does not receive My sayings, has one who judges him; the word I spoke is what will judge him at the last day.

*God’s Word Translation*

Those who reject me by not accepting what I say have a judge appointed for them. The words that I have spoken will judge them on the last day.

*King James Bible*

He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

*Bible in Basic English*

He who puts me on one side and does not take my words to heart, is not without a judge: the word which I have said will be his judge on the last day.

*Darby Bible Translation*

He that rejects me and does not receive my words, has him who judges him: the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day.

#### **<sup>5</sup>John 1:14**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>14</sup>And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.

#### **<sup>6</sup>Revelation 3:16**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

So because you are lukewarm, and neither hot nor cold, I will spit you out of My mouth.

*God’s Word Translation*

But since you are lukewarm and not hot or cold, I’m going to spit you out of my mouth.

*King James Bible*

So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

*Bible in Basic English*

So because you are not one thing or the other, I will have no more to do with you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Thus because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I am about to spue thee out of my mouth.

#### **<sup>7</sup>Revelation 19:7**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

“Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him, for the marriage of the Lamb has come and His bride has made herself ready.”

*God’s Word Translation*

Let us rejoice, be happy, and give him glory because it’s time for the marriage of the lamb. His bride has made herself ready.

*King James Bible*

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

*Bible in Basic English*

Let us be glad with delight, and let us give glory to him: because the time is come for the Lamb to be married, and his wife has made herself ready.

**<sup>8</sup> “If You Love Me, You Will Obey Me”**

---

[www.JesusistheOne.com/Love](http://www.JesusistheOne.com/Love)

**<sup>9</sup>1 Peter 1:19**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

but with precious blood, as of a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ.

*God's Word Translation*

Rather, the payment that freed you was the precious blood of Christ, the lamb with no defects or imperfections.

*King James Bible*

But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

*Bible in Basic English*

But through holy blood, like that of a clean and unmarked lamb, even the blood of Christ:

**<sup>10</sup>1 John 2:6**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

the one who says he abides in Him ought himself to walk in the same manner as He walked.

*God's Word Translation*

Those who say that they live in him must live the same way he lived.

*King James Bible*

He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

*Bible in Basic English*

He who says that he is living in him, will do as he did.

*Darby Bible Translation*

He that says he abides in him ought, even as he walked, himself also so to walk.

**<sup>11</sup>John 1:1**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

*God's Word Translation*

In the beginning the Word already existed. The Word was with God, and the Word was God.

*King James Bible*

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

*Bible in Basic English*

From the first he was the Word, and the Word was in relation with God and was God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

<sup>12</sup>**Matthew 7:21**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven will enter.

*God’s Word Translation*

“Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord!’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only the person who does what my Father in heaven wants.

*King James Bible*

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

*Bible in Basic English*

Not everyone who says to me, Lord, Lord, will go into the kingdom of heaven; but he who does the pleasure of my Father in heaven.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Not every one who says to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but he that does the will of my Father who is in the heavens.

<sup>13</sup>**Matthew 27:18**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For he knew that because of envy they had handed Him over.

*God’s Word Translation*

Pilate knew that they had handed Jesus over to him because they were jealous.

*King James Bible*

For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

*Bible in Basic English*

For he saw that for envy they had given him up.

*Darby Bible Translation*

For he knew that they had delivered him up through envy.

<sup>14</sup>**Enter at Your Own Risk**

---

[www.HouseChurch.com/Risk](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Risk)

Jesus made many wonderful Promises to His true-hearted disciples, one of which was this: Because we are not wiser than Him, nor more Loving.... “If they hated Me, they WILL hate you.”

As with Rabboni Himself, the more you are like Him and the more you “put into practice” (Mat. 7) His Teachings, rather than just sing about them and go along with “the Show”—the more at risk you will find yourself with the Haters of Jesus’ Cross. As in Jesus’ day, it will often be the “religious” who will attack you, lie about you, and misrepresent what you say or do, twisting your words and rewriting history, for their own hidden reasons of

revenge, or hatred, or jealousy (read, if you will, Mat.27:18, Mark 15:10, Acts 5:17, Acts 7:9, Acts 13:45, 17:5, Mat.5:1-12, 43-48). Wherever you live, never venture into “putting into practice” the Teachings of Jesus in your own lives, or encouraging anyone else who calls Jesus, “Lord, Lord” to do so—UNLESS you are willing to pay a heavy price, as Jesus Promised. You don’t tend to find THAT promise etched into a wooden plaque to be purchased at your local christian bookstore. ☺

And yet, if you love Him, you will obey Him. He connected the two thoughts, intimately and absolutely. Loving Him and obeying Him. And, persecution MUST follow. But, that’s a GOOD thing, Jesus said. “Rejoice when...!” “Judge for yourselves whether it is better to obey God, or men.” And, “Woe to you if all men speak well of you.” Rejoice and carry on, if you have the courage to “share in the fellowship of His sufferings” that you “may also share in His Glory.”

There truly is no other kind of Biblical christianity than the kind that results in you being hated and lied about and slandered, regardless of what “cultural religion” may tell you. If it doesn’t include that, Jesus said it’s not yet the Real thing. Satan doesn’t oppose anything that doesn’t threaten him. Will you “Cross the line” and LIVE it, rather than simply use “christianity” as a culture and philosophy, and “lucky rabbit’s foot”? It is up to you, of course. Regardless of the country you live in, or your current state, IF you “put into practice” His Teachings, radical as they are compared to what modern day religious culture says or does, you will pay a supernaturally high price. It can only be the price of the Pearl, if it’s the Real thing.

### **<sup>15</sup>John 3:27**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

John answered and said, “A man can receive nothing unless it has been given him from heaven.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

John answered, “People can’t receive anything unless it has been given to them from heaven.

#### *King James Bible*

John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

And this was John’s answer: A man is unable to have anything if it is not given to him from heaven.

### **<sup>16</sup>Isaiah 9:6**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

For a child will be born to us, a son will be given to us; And the government will rest on His shoulders; And His name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

A child will be born for us. A son will be given to us. The government will rest on his shoulders. He will be named: Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.

*King James Bible*

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

*Bible in Basic English*

For to us a child has come, to us a son is given; and the government has been placed in his hands; and he has been named Wise Guide, Strong God, Father for ever, Prince of Peace.

## Chapter 4



# What is “Not” DisFellowship?

Let’s get into the topic at hand. Mostly this whole discussion about “disFellowship” may come off to some like describing the carburetion schematic of a 1958 Ferrari—to an Italian farmer in 858 AD. ☺ As in, “Huh? What in the world are you talking about?!” The word “carburetion” (mixing oxygen and a vaporous fossil fuel, in proper ratio, with intention of igniting a controlled explosion to fire cylinders in a combustion engine) would mean nothing to a person living hundreds of years before such a concept could make any sense.

“Carburetion” just doesn’t MEAN anything in the experience of an Italian farmer in 858. It’s not his world, and the concepts are unfamiliar and impractical to him. Nevertheless, the guiding “principles” and “truths” that make internal combustion possible and powerful, no matter how “unfamiliar” to him, were ALREADY TRUE in his day. He just couldn’t comprehend what he had never seen. Now that the world has learned of the truths of physics and chemistry that had always been there, a primary school student is now capable of understanding and applying the principles. Combustion and carburetion WOULD have worked in 858 had someone been there to explain and demonstrate the reality of the laws. The principles of physics and chemistry were no less TRUE just because no one that farmer knew had ever seen them at work.

That farmer... he also believed the earth was FLAT. So, was the earth flat then because no one thought differently? Was the earth flat just because he was *sure* that it was? I mean, ALL of the “wonderful, loving people” around him were SURE the earth was flat. Did *that* make the earth flat? Perhaps GOD knew<sup>1</sup> the earth was “round” long before 858 AD—even if that farmer and all of his friends, and family, and ancestors were certain otherwise? Did you know that people were called nasty names if anyone *dared to question* what “the majority” wanted to believe?

In 1548 everyone believed “the sun revolves around the earth.” By February 17, 1600 the religious world of *that* day was murdering people who taught that the earth revolves around the sun. As foolish as that sounds to today’s primary school students, the character and pride within religious men who are obsessed with protecting what they deem to be “their turf” is no different today. Human flesh has not changed—only the “topics” it hates, or doesn’t yet understand, have changed.

Perhaps “our experiences” are not the limit of what God has said on a topic? So, we’ll need to work our way into the topic of “disFellowship” by first discussing what a church is meant to be, and what Fellowship truly<sup>2</sup> is meant to be, from the only perspective that matters: the perspective of the Father and the Son. Can I repeat<sup>3</sup> that particular point? The ONLY perspective that matters about Fellowship...is the perspective of the Father and Son! Their Fellowship with One another—and the Fellowship They have Ordained for us with Them, and with one another (John 17:5-24<sup>4</sup>)—that is all that matters to us. Nothing less than THEIR Perspective will ever be acceptable to those who love Him with all of their heart, soul, mind and strength.

So what do the Scriptures say, and what did God’s People do in those days when men who knew Jesus well and were Trained by Him were leading and teaching the church? What is “disFellowship” anyway?

For starters, this may not be obvious, but “Disfellowship” is NOT the same as roman catholic “excommunication.” Excommunication is sometimes practiced in the institutional religious world. It is rare that an institution, whether small or large, living room or edifice, would have the courage to even “excommunicate” a “member.” In so doing, they are keenly aware they are risking political adversity, violent attacks, falling attendance, and disappearing donations associated with trouble this “member” and his friends may start. Of course, since a religious institution (as opposed to a

## Chapter 4

church built on daily Together-Life<sup>5</sup>) is totally dependent upon nickels and noses, this “rocking the boat” by dealing with sin is “too much to ask,” no matter what Jesus says. Why would you “fire a customer” if your “business model” is to “grow” attendance, in order to grow donations and fame?

However, in extreme cases sometimes “excommunication” and censoring will take place “for the good of the organization.” Instances may include when a member propagates “heresies.” “Heresies” are usually defined privately as those things which threaten the structure and hierarchy. At times, “excommunication” may also be utilized when embarrassing moral or criminal violations threaten to create media or public relations issues. Whether the ousted member is a scapegoat or a true threat, sometimes, though rarely, the “sacrament” of “excommunication” will be invoked by “attendance-based churches.”

The problem is... there is no such thing as “excommunication” in the Bible. That’s a problem if you’re part of an organization that engages in excommunication, however rarely. Of course it’s an even bigger problem if you’re part of an organization that *never* takes responsibility to *care* about dealing with sin.

What WOULD be the excuse for a religious organization to even exist—if it is not their primary objective to help people overcome the sins that ruin their relationship with God, their spouses, their children, and others? Surely, we must care deeply<sup>6</sup> about those things that trash people’s lives with God, and their marriages, and their families—and be practical and useful<sup>7</sup> in helping them<sup>8</sup> be Overcomers. But “excommunication” isn’t a Biblical idea, or practice. In reality, excommunication is both cruel and impotent. It is legalistic, unfruitful, judgmental, and elitist. And, if one is trying to please God, it is also useless.

## Chapter 4 Footnotes

### <sup>1</sup>Isaiah 40:22

*New American Standard Bible*

It is He who sits above the circle of the earth, And its inhabitants are like grasshoppers,  
Who stretches out the heavens like a curtain And spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.

*God’s Word Translation*

God is enthroned above the earth, and those who live on it are like grasshoppers. He stretches out the sky like a canopy and spreads it out like a tent to live in.

*King James Bible*

It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in:

*Bible in Basic English*

It is he who is seated over the arch of the earth, and the people in it are as small as locusts; by him the heavens are stretched out like an arch, and made ready like a tent for a living-place.

**<sup>21</sup> John 1:3**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

what we have seen and heard we proclaim to you also, so that you too may have fellowship with us; and indeed our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.

*God's Word Translation*

This is the life we have seen and heard. We are reporting about it to you also so that you, too, can have a relationship with us. Our relationship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ.

*King James Bible*

That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

*Bible in Basic English*

We give you word of all we have seen and everything which has come to our ears, so that you may be united with us; and we are united with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ:

*Darby Bible Translation*

that which we have seen and heard we report to you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and our fellowship is indeed with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

**<sup>3</sup>Philippians 3:1**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things again is no trouble to me, and it is a safeguard for you.

*God's Word Translation*

Now then, brothers and sisters, be joyful in the Lord. It's no trouble for me to write the same things to you, and it's for your safety.

*King James Bible*

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

*Bible in Basic English*

For the rest, my brothers, be glad in the Lord. Writing the same things to you is no trouble to me, and for you it is safe.

*Darby Bible Translation*

For the rest, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord: to write the same things to you, to me is not irksome, and for you safe.

**<sup>4</sup>John 17:5-24**

*Amplified Bible*

---

<sup>5</sup>And now, Father, glorify Me along with Yourself and restore Me to such majesty and honor in Your presence as I had with You before the world existed.

<sup>6</sup>I have manifested Your Name [I have revealed Your very Self, Your real Self] to the people whom You have given Me out of the world. They were Yours, and You gave them to Me, and they have obeyed and kept Your word.

<sup>7</sup>Now [at last] they know and understand that all You have given Me belongs to You [is really and truly Yours].

<sup>8</sup>For the [uttered] words that You gave Me I have given them; and they have received and accepted [them] and have come to know positively and in reality [to believe with absolute assurance] that I came forth from Your presence, and they have believed and are convinced that You did send Me.

<sup>9</sup>I am praying for them. I am not praying (requesting) for the world, but for those You have given Me, for they belong to You.

<sup>10</sup>All [things that are] Mine are Yours, and all [things that are] Yours belong to Me; and I am glorified in (through) them. [They have done Me honor; in them My glory is achieved.]

<sup>11</sup>And [now] I am no more in the world, but these are [still] in the world, and I am coming to You. Holy Father, keep in Your Name [in the knowledge of Yourself] those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We [are one].

<sup>12</sup>While I was with them, I kept and preserved them in Your Name [in the knowledge and worship of You]. Those You have given Me I guarded and protected, and not one of them has perished or is lost except the son of perdition [Judas Iscariot—the one who is now doomed to destruction, destined to be lost], that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

<sup>13</sup>And now I am coming to You; I say these things while I am still in the world, so that My joy may be made full and complete and perfect in them [that they may experience My delight fulfilled in them, that My enjoyment may be perfected in their own souls, that they may have My gladness within them, filling their hearts].

<sup>14</sup>I have given and delivered to them Your word (message) and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world [do not belong to the world], just as I am not of the world.

<sup>15</sup>I do not ask that You will take them out of the world, but that You will keep and protect them from the evil one.

<sup>16</sup>They are not of the world (worldly, belonging to the world), [just] as I am not of the world.

<sup>17</sup>Sanctify them [purify, consecrate, separate them for Yourself, make them holy] by the Truth; Your Word is Truth.

<sup>18</sup>Just as You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world.

<sup>19</sup>And so for their sake and on their behalf I sanctify (dedicate, consecrate) Myself, that they also may be sanctified (dedicated, consecrated, made holy) in the Truth.

## A REVOLUTION WITHOUT DANCING IS A REVOLUTION NOT WORTH HAVING!

<sup>20</sup>Neither for these alone do I pray [it is not for their sake only that I make this request], but also for all those who will ever come to believe in (trust in, cling to, rely on) Me through their word and teaching,

<sup>21</sup>That they all may be one, [just] as You, Father, are in Me and I in You, that they also may be one in Us, so that the world may believe and be convinced that You have sent Me.

<sup>22</sup>I have given to them the glory and honor which You have given Me, that they may be one [even] as We are one:

<sup>23</sup> in them and You in Me, in order that they may become one and perfectly united, that the world may know and [definitely] recognize that You sent Me and that You have loved them [even] as You have loved Me.

<sup>24</sup>Father, I desire that they also whom You have entrusted to Me [as Your gift to Me] may be with Me where I am, so that they may see My glory, which You have given Me [Your love gift to Me]; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world.

### **<sup>5</sup>Building Principles—Leaders' Meetings**

---

[www.HouseChurch.com/Leaders](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Leaders)

### **<sup>6</sup>His Mark**

---

[www.HisWounds.com/Mark](http://www.HisWounds.com/Mark)

### **<sup>7</sup>Jeremiah 23:22**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

But if they had stood in My council, Then they would have announced My words to My people, And would have turned them back from their evil way And from the evil of their deeds.

*God's Word Translation*

If they had been in my inner circle, they would have announced my words to my people. They would have turned back from their evil ways and the evil they have done.

*King James Bible*

But if they had stood in my counsel, and had caused my people to hear my words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings.

*Bible in Basic English*

But if they had been in my secret, then they would have made my people give ear to my words, turning them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings.

*Darby Bible Translation*

But if they had stood in my council, and had caused my people to hear my words, then would they have turned them from their evil way and from the wickedness of their doings.

### **<sup>8</sup>2 Corinthians 5:20**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>20</sup>Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were making an appeal through us; we beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God.

## Chapter 5



# Vive La Difference!

Now then, you might rightfully and sincerely ask what the difference is between “excommunication” and so-called “disFellowship.” The first is unBiblical, judgmental, and destructive. The other, “disFellowship,” is entirely Biblical in concept and practice, even ordained and mandated by God in certain circumstances.

What’s the difference between “excommunication” and “disFellowship” exactly? The answer lies here: Where there is no TRUE fellowship in daily life, there can be no “disFellowship.” Anytime the “church” or so-called “fellowship” consists primarily of mere attendance-based acquaintances—there logically can be no *possibility* of DIS-fellowship. In an institutional or attendance-based environment, the unBiblical *nature* of the church can only allow for the unBiblical “sacrament” of “excommunication.”<sup>1</sup> “You can never “DISfellowship” a person who was never voluntarily a part of your daily life, your meals, your children’s lives, your joy, your possessions, your travels, your chores, or your plans in life.

The word itself, “*fellowship*,” Biblically necessitates an “intertwining” of lives amongst those who are together “in Christ.” Of course, we can’t “dis” anything that we are not truly “doing.” To “dis-engage” we must first have been engaged. To dis-assemble a piece of equipment, it must first have been assembled. And we cannot “disFellowship” anyone who was not “in Fellowship”—intimately intertwined into our lives in a Christ-centered, Truth-centered Holy way.

When defining the Greek word “koinonia,” often used by God in the Bible and translated into the English word “fellowship,” we must understand the depth of this word, in God’s Mind. To unBelievers, when a coliseum of football fanatics chant and scream, and wear clothing of a similar team color, that might be, to the heathen, a form of “fellowship” or “commonness.” But, in the meaning of God, as defined in the Bible (we’ll discuss this in greater detail) we can never claim that “fellowship” has anything to do with anything so banal and external as “having a potluck dinner,” or “social” relationship, or “common hobby” relationship. THAT is not “fellowship” to a follower of Jesus Christ. THAT is not the nature or substance of Jesus’ daily relationship with His disciples—then, OR now.

If we wish to maintain our honesty and integrity as we determine the “meaning” of the word “Koinonia” to a Christian, we must define it as Jesus defined it at various times and in various ways... and live it how He lived it. The word “koinonia” is powerful in the Greek language of the Bible, and in the Life of Jesus. It includes a willing and always-voluntary lifestyle of generosity, self-sacrifice, and vulnerability—materially, emotionally, and spiritually, for Jesus’ sake. The phrases “*All things in common*”<sup>2</sup> and “intertwined daily lives” are a part of Biblically defining “Christian fellowship.”<sup>3</sup>

One *could* pretend that God meant something superficial by the word “Koinonia” (Fellowship), if one had a mind to justify the frequent and admittedly<sup>4</sup> empty, shallow relationships in christendom today. But why would we want to justify what doesn’t please God, nor in any way helps us to know Him better? It would be far superior to rethink what has been literally “sold” to us by cultural religion and millionaire christian book-peddlers, and take seriously what GOD says. What does HE want us to be individually, and collectively as HIS Church? Would we be willing to prayerfully take His Words to heart? Luke 9:23-26<sup>5</sup>, Luke 14:25-34<sup>6</sup>, Luke 18:28-30<sup>7</sup>, Luke 19:14<sup>8</sup>, John 13:34-35<sup>9</sup>, John 15:12-21<sup>10</sup>, John 17:5-24<sup>11</sup>, Acts 2:42-47<sup>12</sup>, Acts 4:32-35<sup>13</sup>, Acts 20:17-38<sup>14</sup>, 1Cor.12:12-13:7<sup>15</sup>, Eph.2:19-22<sup>16</sup>, Eph.3:10<sup>17</sup>, Eph.5:27<sup>18</sup>, Rev.22:17<sup>19</sup>, et al.

## *Chapter 5 Footnotes*

### **<sup>1</sup>Wikipedia Entry for Excommunication**

“Excommunication is a religious censure used to deprive or suspend membership in a religious community. The word literally means putting [someone] out of communion. In some churches, excommunication includes spiritual condemnation of the member or group. Censures and sanctions sometimes follow excommunication; these include banishment, shunning, and shaming, depending on the group’s religion or religious

community. Excommunication is the most extreme form of church discipline exercised by modern churches. Excommunication is the most serious ecclesiastical penalty levied against a member of the Roman Catholic Church. It is a seldom used punishment to discipline unrelenting defiance or other serious violations of church rules, especially by those who are accused of “spreading division and confusion among the faithful”—meaning, in practice, that the option of excommunication is more likely to be enforced when the disobedient Catholic is a visible and presumably influential public figure (such as a politician), but only rarely in the cases of non-public figures.”

[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Excommunication](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Excommunication)

---

## <sup>2</sup>Acts 2:44

### *New American Standard Bible*

And all those who had believed were together and had all things in common;

### *God's Word Translation*

All the believers kept meeting together, and they shared everything with each other.

### *King James Bible*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

### *Bible in Basic English*

And all those who were of the faith kept together, and had all things in common;

### *Darby Bible Translation*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common,

---

## <sup>3</sup>Wikipedia Entry for Koinonia

“Koinonia is the anglicisation of a Greek word (κοινωνία) that means partnership or fellowship. The word is used frequently in the New Testament of the Bible to describe the relationship within the early Christian church. As a result the word is used frequently within Christian circles to describe the fellowship and community of Christians—or more frequently the idealised state of fellowship and community that should exist. The essential meaning of the koinonia embraces concepts conveyed in the English terms fellowship, association, community, communion, joint participation, sharing and intimacy. By extension, koinonia refers to the share one has in a joint venture or relationship. Koinonia can therefore refer in some contexts to a jointly contributed gift or in other contexts to the offering of one's hand as a pledge of fellowship. In the New Testament, the basis of fellowship begins with a mystical joining of Jesus Christ with each believer. This union is to be experienced in practical daily life. The same bonds that link the individual to Jesus also link him or her with other believers. The New Testament letters describe those bonds as so vital and genuine that a deep level of intimacy can be experienced among the members of a local church. The first usage of koinonia in the Greek New Testament is found in Acts 2:42-47, where we read a striking description of the common life shared by the early Christian believers in Jerusalem: ‘They devoted themselves to the apostles’ teaching and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer...All the believers were together and had everything in common. Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need...They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people.’

“The term, “the fellowship,” was not a title or name for the Christian church in Jerusalem; rather, it was a description of its central character as one of associating and sharing in

a common life. The word has such a multitude of meanings that no single English word is adequate to express its depth and richness. It is a derivative of "koinos," the word for common. Koinonia, is a complex, rich, and thoroughly fascinating Greek approach to building community or teamwork. Those who have studied the word find there is always an implication of action included in its meaning. The definition of the word is quite rich in that there are many connotations because the word is used in a variety of related contexts. Koinonos means 'a sharer' as in to share with one another in a possession held in common. It implies the spirit of generous sharing or the act of giving as contrasted with selfish getting. When koinonia is present, the spirit of sharing and giving becomes tangible. In most contexts, generosity is not an abstract ideal, but a demonstrable action resulting in a tangible and realistic expression of giving.

"In classical Greek, koinonein means "to have a share in a thing," as when two or more people hold all things in common. It can mean "going shares" with others, thereby having "business dealings," such as joint ownership of a ship. Participation is vital because vital as the members are sharing in what others have. What is shared, received or given becomes the common ground through which Koinonia becomes real. Two people may enter into marriage in order to have "koinonia of life", that is to say, to live together a life in which everything is shared. Koinonia was used to refer to the marriage bond, and it suggested a powerful common interest that could hold two or more persons together.

"The term can also relate to a spiritual relationship. In this sense, the meaning something that is held and shared jointly with others for God, speaking to man's "relationship with God". The early Christian community saw this as a relationship with the Holy Spirit. In this context, koinonia highlights a higher purpose or mission that benefits the greater good of the members as a whole. The term "enthusiasm" is connected to this meaning of koinonia for it signifies "to be imbued with the Spirit of God in Us."

"To create a bond between comrades is the meaning of koinonia when people are recognized, share their joy and pains together, and are united because of their common experiences, interests and goals. Fellowship creates a mutual bond which overrides each individual's pride, vanity, and individualism, fulfilling the human yearning with fraternity, belonging, and companionship. This meaning of koinonia accounts for the ease by which sharing and generosity flow. When combined with the spiritual implications of koinonia, fellowship provides a joint participation in God's graces and denotes that common possession of spiritual values.

"Thus early Greco-Roman Christians had a fellowship God, sharing the common experience of joys, fears, tears, and divine glory. In this manner, those who shared believed their true wealth lay not in what they had, but in what they gave to others. Fellowship is never passive in the meaning of koinonia, it is always linked to action, not just being together, but also doing together. With fellowship comes a close and intimate relationship embracing ideas, communication, and frankness, as in a true, blessed interdependent friendship among multiple group members.

"The idea of community denotes a "common unity" of purpose and interests. By engaging in this united relationship a new level of consciousness and conscience emerges that spurs the group to higher order thinking and action, thus empowering and encouraging its members to exist in a mutually beneficial relationship. Thus community and family become closely intertwined, because aiming at a common unity strives to overcome brokenness, divisiveness, and, ultimately gaining wholeness with each of the members, with their environment, and with their God. By giving mutual support, friendship and family merge. Both fellowship and community imply an inner and outer unity. No where

in the framework of community is their implied a hierarchy of command and control. While there is leadership, the leader's task is to focus energy, and align interests, not impose control.

"Koinonia creates a brethren bond which builds trust and, especially when combined with the values of Wisdom, Virtue and Honor, overcomes two of humanity's deepest fears and insecurities: being betrayed and being demeaned.

"Whether working collectively or individually, the innovators of ancient Greece worked for the greater good of the whole – to propel their community forward, to share their understanding with others so that all ships would rise on a rising tide. Thus loftier goals and dreams are more easily manifested in the mind and achieved in reality. The team's sense of Purpose became manifest."

[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Koinonia](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Koinonia)

#### **<sup>4</sup>Barna Update, January 10, 2006**

---

Surveys Show Pastors Claim Congregants Are Deeply Committed to God But Congregants Deny It!

January 10, 2006(Ventura, CA) - Pastors Believe That All Is Well Spiritually

Based on interviews with a representative national sample of 627 Protestant pastors, the Barna study discovered that pastors believe a large majority of their congregants deem their faith in God to be the highest priority in their life. On average, pastors contend that 70% of the adults in their church consider their personal faith in God to transcend all other priorities. Amazingly, as many as one out of every six pastors (16%) contends that 90% or more of the adults in their church hold their relationship with God as their top life priority!

In contrast to the upbeat pastoral view of people's faith, a nationally representative sample of 1002 adults was asked the same question—i.e., to identify their top priority in life—and a very different perspective emerged. Only one out of every seven adults (15%) placed their faith in God at the top of their priority list. To make an apples-to-apples comparison, the survey isolated those who attend Protestant churches and found that even among that segment of adults, not quite one out of every four (23%) named their faith in God as their top priority in life.

Overall, only one measure - how many people are involved in some form of church-related volunteer activity or ministry effort - was listed by at least half of all pastors (54%) as a measure of the spiritual health of their congregation. Only two other criteria—church attendance and some type of life change experience (usually meaning that a person has made a first-time commitment to Jesus Christ as their savior) were named as important criteria by more than one out of every seven pastors. (Each of these criteria was listed by 45% of all pastors.) Other top-rated standards were whether congregants were involved in evangelism (13%), how much new information or knowledge about Christianity the people received (10%), how much money was donated to the church (10%), and the comments made by congregants to the pastor (10%).

The unifying thread running through pastors' responses to an open-ended survey question regarding how congregational health is assessed was that the most common measures do not assess much beyond the superficial participation of people in church or faith-related activity. In other words, the typical pastor measures the spiritual health

of congregants by considering one or two numbers (e.g. church and Sunday school attendance) and a handful of vague impressions (what did exit comments suggest about people's reaction to the sermon, how widespread was people's participation in the singing, were there enough people who were sufficiently trained to enable the services and programs to operate smoothly).

Perhaps the most telling information relates to the measures that are not widely used by pastors to assess people's spiritual health. Less than one out of every ten pastors mentioned indicators such as the maturity of a person's faith in God, the intensity of the commitment to loving and serving God and people, the nature of each congregant's personal ministry, the breadth of congregational involvement in community service, the extent to which believers have some forms of accountability for their spiritual development and lifestyle, the manner in which believers use their resources to advance the kingdom of God, how often people worship God during the week or feel as if they have experienced the presence of God, or how faith is integrated into the family experience of those who are connected with the church.

In fact, the survey found some disturbing results concerning the priorities of pastors in how they measure spiritual health

- Stewardship is rarely deemed a meaningful measure of church vitality. Church budgets are typically set based on the assumption that the average congregant will give 2% to 3% of their income to the ministry. Consequently, the fact that only 6% of born again adults tithe is not seen as an indicator of lukewarm commitment.
- Evangelism is not a priority in most churches, so the fact that most church members do not verbally share the gospel in a given year is not deemed problematic. Only one out of every eight churches bother to evaluate how many of their congregants are sharing their faith in Christ with non-believers.
- When pastors described their notion of significant, faith-driven life change, the vast majority (more than four out five) focused on salvation but ignored issues related to lifestyle or spiritual maturity. The fact that the lifestyle of most church members is essentially indistinguishable from that of unchurched people is not a concern for most churches; whether or not people have accepted Jesus Christ as their savior is the sole or primary indicator of "life transformation," regardless of whether their life after such a decision produces spiritual fruit.
- Churches are prone to looking for indicators of serving people within the church more often than seeking signs that needy people outside the church are being cared for. In fact, for every two churches that consider the congregation's breadth of ministry to people not connected to the church to be an indicator of spiritual health, there are five churches that focus on the amount of "in-reach" activity undertaken.
- Pastors are nine times more likely to seek reactions to their sermon than they are to assess the congregation's reactions to visitors.
- Perhaps most alarming of all, pastors were 21 times more likely to evaluate whether people showed up (i.e., attendance) than to determine whether people experienced the presence of God during their time at the church.

According to George Barna, the best-selling author of books such as *Revolution*, *The Habits of Highly Effective Churches*, and *The Second Coming of the Church*, two well-known adages summarize the situation. "It has been said that 'you get what you measure' and that 'you see what you want to see.' Both of those sayings go a

long way toward describing the assessment problem that plagues churches today,” he stated. “The only way to explain the enormous gap between the perceptions of pastors and the reality of people’s lives is to understand that pastors evaluate spiritual health from an institutional perspective—that is, are people involved in keeping the system going—while people are aware of their unmet need to have a deeper and more meaningful relationship with God.”

Barna, whose firm conducted both national surveys, felt that the information could help churches reconsider how they evaluate their ministry. “The nation’s adults deserve some credit for recognizing and acknowledging that God is not a top priority in their life. The challenge to church leaders is to stop pandering for popularity and to set the bar higher. People only live up to the expectations set for them. When the dominant expectations are that people show up, play nicely together and keep the system going, the potential for having the kinds of life-changing experiences that characterized the early Church are limited, at best. If churches believe in the life-changing power of the gospel and the Holy Spirit, they must hold people to a higher and more challenging standard.”

“There has never been a time,” the researcher continued, “when American society was in more dire need of the Christian Church to provide a pathway to a better future. Given the voluminous stream of moral challenges, and the rampant spiritual hunger that defines our culture today, this should be the heyday for biblical ministry. As things stand now, we have become content with placating sinners and filling auditoriums as the marks of spiritual health.”

[www.barna.org/FlexPage.aspx?Page=BarnaUpdate&BarnaUpdateID=215](http://www.barna.org/FlexPage.aspx?Page=BarnaUpdate&BarnaUpdateID=215)

---

### **<sup>5</sup>Luke 9:23-26**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

<sup>23</sup>And He was saying to them all, “If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross daily and follow Me.

<sup>24</sup>For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake, he is the one who will save it.

<sup>25</sup>For what is a man profited if he gains the whole world, and loses or forfeits himself?

<sup>26</sup>For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when He comes in His glory, and the glory of the Father and of the holy angels.

---

### **<sup>6</sup>Luke 14:25-34**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

<sup>25</sup>Now large crowds were going along with Him; and He turned and said to them,

<sup>26</sup>If anyone comes to Me, and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple.

<sup>27</sup>Whoever does not carry his own cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple.

<sup>28</sup>For which one of you, when he wants to build a tower, does not first sit down and calculate the cost to see if he has enough to complete it?

<sup>29</sup>Otherwise, when he has laid a foundation and is not able to finish, all who observe it begin to ridicule him,

<sup>30</sup>saying, ‘This man began to build and was not able to finish.’

<sup>31</sup>Or what king, when he sets out to meet another king in battle, will not first sit down and consider whether he is strong enough with ten thousand men to encounter the one coming against him with twenty thousand?

<sup>32</sup>Or else, while the other is still far away, he sends a delegation and asks for terms of peace.

<sup>33</sup>So then, none of you can be My disciple who does not give up all his own possessions.

<sup>34</sup>Therefore, salt is good; but if even salt has become tasteless, with what will it be seasoned?

---

### **<sup>7</sup>Luke 18:28-30**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

<sup>28</sup>Peter said, "Behold, we have left our own homes and followed You."

<sup>29</sup>And He said to them, "Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God,

<sup>30</sup>who will not receive many times as much at this time and in the age to come, eternal life."

---

### **<sup>8</sup>Luke 19:14**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

"But his citizens hated him and sent a delegation after him, saying, 'We do not want this man to reign over us.'"

#### *God's Word Translation*

"The citizens of his own country hated him. They sent representatives to follow him and say to the person who was going to appoint him, 'We don't want this man to be our king.'"

#### *King James Bible*

But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

But his people had no love for him, and sent representatives after him, saying, We will not have this man for our ruler.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy after him, saying, We will not that this man should reign over us.

---

### **<sup>9</sup>John 13:34-35**

#### *Amplified Bible*

<sup>34</sup>I give you a new commandment: that you should love one another. Just as I have loved you, so you too should love one another.

<sup>35</sup>By this shall all [men] know that you are My disciples, if you love one another [if you keep on showing love among yourselves].

**<sup>10</sup>John 15:12-21**

*Amplified Bible*

---

<sup>12</sup>This is My commandment: that you love one another [just] as I have loved you.

<sup>13</sup>No one has greater love [no one has shown stronger affection] than to lay down (give up) his own life for his friends.

<sup>14</sup>You are My friends if you keep on doing the things which I command you to do.

<sup>15</sup>I do not call you servants (slaves) any longer, for the servant does not know what his master is doing (working out). But I have called you My friends, because I have made known to you everything that I have heard from My Father. [I have revealed to you everything that I have learned from Him.]

<sup>16</sup>You have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you and I have appointed you [I have planted you], that you might go and bear fruit and keep on bearing, and that your fruit may be lasting [that it may remain, abide], so that whatever you ask the Father in My Name [as presenting all that I AM], He may give it to you.

<sup>17</sup>This is what I command you: that you love one another.

<sup>18</sup>If the world hates you, know that it hated Me before it hated you.

<sup>19</sup>If you belonged to the world, the world would treat you with affection and would love you as its own. But because you are not of the world [no longer one with it], but I have chosen (selected) you out of the world, the world hates (detests) you.

<sup>20</sup>Remember that I told you, A servant is not greater than his master [is not superior to him]. If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they kept My word and obeyed My teachings, they will also keep and obey yours.

<sup>21</sup>But they will do all this to you [inflict all this suffering on you] because of [your bearing] My name and on My account, for they do not know or understand the One Who sent Me.

**<sup>11</sup>John 17:5-24**

*Amplified Bible*

---

<sup>5</sup>And now, Father, glorify Me along with Yourself and restore Me to such majesty and honor in Your presence as I had with You before the world existed.

<sup>6</sup>I have manifested Your Name [I have revealed Your very Self, Your real Self] to the people whom You have given Me out of the world. They were Yours, and You gave them to Me, and they have obeyed and kept Your word.

<sup>7</sup>Now [at last] they know and understand that all You have given Me belongs to You [is really and truly Yours].

<sup>8</sup>For the [uttered] words that You gave Me I have given them; and they have received and accepted [them] and have come to know positively and in reality [to believe with absolute assurance] that I came forth from Your presence, and they have believed and are convinced that You did send Me.

<sup>9</sup>I am praying for them. I am not praying (requesting) for the world, but for those You have given Me, for they belong to You.

<sup>10</sup>All [things that are] Mine are Yours, and all [things that are] Yours belong to Me; and I am glorified in (through) them. [They have done Me honor; in them My glory is achieved.]

<sup>11</sup>And [now] I am no more in the world, but these are [still] in the world, and I am coming to You. Holy Father, keep in Your Name [in the knowledge of Yourself] those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We [are one].

<sup>12</sup>While I was with them, I kept and preserved them in Your Name [in the knowledge and worship of You]. Those You have given Me I guarded and protected, and not one of them has perished or is lost except the son of perdition [Judas Iscariot—the one who is now doomed to destruction, destined to be lost], that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

<sup>13</sup>And now I am coming to You; I say these things while I am still in the world, so that My joy may be made full and complete and perfect in them [that they may experience My delight fulfilled in them, that My enjoyment may be perfected in their own souls, that they may have My gladness within them, filling their hearts].

<sup>14</sup>I have given and delivered to them Your word (message) and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world [do not belong to the world], just as I am not of the world.

<sup>15</sup>I do not ask that You will take them out of the world, but that You will keep and protect them from the evil one.

<sup>16</sup>They are not of the world (worldly, belonging to the world), [just] as I am not of the world.

<sup>17</sup>Sanctify them [purify, consecrate, separate them for Yourself, make them holy] by the Truth; Your Word is Truth.

<sup>18</sup>Just as You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world.

<sup>19</sup>And so for their sake and on their behalf I sanctify (dedicate, consecrate) Myself, that they also may be sanctified (dedicated, consecrated, made holy) in the Truth.

<sup>20</sup>Neither for these alone do I pray [it is not for their sake only that I make this request], but also for all those who will ever come to believe in (trust in, cling to, rely on) Me through their word and teaching,

<sup>21</sup>That they all may be one, [just] as You, Father, are in Me and I in You, that they also may be one in Us, so that the world may believe and be convinced that You have sent Me.

<sup>22</sup>I have given to them the glory and honor which You have given Me, that they may be one [even] as We are one:

<sup>23</sup>I in them and You in Me, in order that they may become one and perfectly united, that the world may know and [definitely] recognize that You sent Me and that You have loved them [even] as You have loved Me.

<sup>24</sup>Father, I desire that they also whom You have entrusted to Me [as Your gift to Me] may be with Me where I am, so that they may see My glory, which You have given Me [Your love gift to Me]; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world.

<sup>12</sup>**Acts 2:42-47**

*New International Version*

<sup>42</sup>They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer. <sup>43</sup>Everyone was filled with awe, and many wonders and miraculous signs were done by the apostles. <sup>44</sup>All the believers were together and had

everything in common. <sup>45</sup>Selling their possessions and goods, they gave to anyone as he had need. <sup>46</sup>Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, <sup>47</sup>praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved.

---

**13 Acts 4:32-35**

*New International Version*

<sup>32</sup>All the believers were one in heart and mind. No one claimed that any of his possessions was his own, but they shared everything they had. <sup>33</sup>With great power the apostles continued to testify to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and much grace was upon them all. <sup>34</sup>There were no needy persons among them. For from time to time those who owned lands or houses sold them, brought the money from the sales <sup>35</sup>and put it at the apostles' feet, and it was distributed to anyone as he had need.

---

**14 Acts 20:17-38**

*New International Version*

<sup>17</sup>From Miletus, Paul sent to Ephesus for the elders of the church. <sup>18</sup>When they arrived, he said to them: "You know how I lived the whole time I was with you, from the first day I came into the province of Asia. <sup>19</sup>I served the Lord with great humility and with tears, although I was severely tested by the plots of the Jews. <sup>20</sup>You know that I have not hesitated to preach anything that would be helpful to you but have taught you publicly and from house to house. <sup>21</sup>I have declared to both Jews and Greeks that they must turn to God in repentance and have faith in our Lord Jesus.

<sup>22</sup>And now, compelled by the Spirit, I am going to Jerusalem, not knowing what will happen to me there. <sup>23</sup>I only know that in every city the Holy Spirit warns me that prison and hardships are facing me. <sup>24</sup>However, I consider my life worth nothing to me, if only I may finish the race and complete the task the Lord Jesus has given me—the task of testifying to the gospel of God's grace.

<sup>25</sup>Now I know that none of you among whom I have gone about preaching the kingdom will ever see me again. <sup>26</sup>Therefore, I declare to you today that I am innocent of the blood of all men. <sup>27</sup>For I have not hesitated to proclaim to you the whole will of God. <sup>28</sup>Keep watch over yourselves and all the flock of which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers. Be shepherds of the church of God, which he bought with his own blood. <sup>29</sup>I know that after I leave, savage wolves will come in among you and will not spare the flock. <sup>30</sup>Even from your own number men will arise and distort the truth in order to draw away disciples after them. <sup>31</sup>So be on your guard! Remember that for three years I never stopped warning each of you night and day with tears.

<sup>32</sup>Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified. <sup>33</sup>I have not coveted anyone's silver or gold or clothing. <sup>34</sup>You yourselves know that these hands of mine have supplied my own needs and the needs of my companions. <sup>35</sup>In everything I did, I showed you that by this kind of hard work we must help the weak, remembering the words the Lord Jesus himself said: 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.

<sup>36</sup>When he had said this, he knelt down with all of them and prayed. <sup>37</sup>They all wept as they embraced him and kissed him. <sup>38</sup>What grieved them most was his statement that they would never see his face again. Then they accompanied him to the ship.

**15 1 Corinthians 12:12-13:7***New King James Version*

<sup>12</sup>For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ. <sup>13</sup>For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body—whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free—and have all been made to drink into one Spirit. <sup>14</sup>For in fact the body is not one member but many.

<sup>15</sup>If the foot should say, “Because I am not a hand, I am not of the body,” is it therefore not of the body? <sup>16</sup>And if the ear should say, “Because I am not an eye, I am not of the body,” is it therefore not of the body? <sup>17</sup>If the whole body were an eye, where would be the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where would be the smelling? <sup>18</sup>But now God has set the members, each one of them, in the body just as He pleased. <sup>19</sup>And if they were all one member, where would the body be?

<sup>20</sup>But now indeed there are many members, yet one body. <sup>21</sup>And the eye cannot say to the hand, “I have no need of you”; nor again the head to the feet, “I have no need of you.” <sup>22</sup>No, much rather, those members of the body which seem to be weaker are necessary. <sup>23</sup>And those members of the body which we think to be less honorable, on these we bestow greater honor; and our unpresentable parts have greater modesty, <sup>24</sup>but our presentable parts have no need. But God composed the body, having given greater honor to that part which lacks it, <sup>25</sup>that there should be no schism in the body, but that the members should have the same care for one another. <sup>26</sup>And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

<sup>27</sup>Now you are the body of Christ, and members individually. <sup>28</sup>And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, administrations, varieties of tongues. <sup>29</sup>Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all workers of miracles? <sup>30</sup>Do all have gifts of healings? Do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret? <sup>31</sup>But earnestly desire the best gifts. And yet I show you a more excellent way.

<sup>1</sup>Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. <sup>2</sup>And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. <sup>3</sup>And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing.

<sup>4</sup>Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; <sup>5</sup>does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; <sup>6</sup>does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; <sup>7</sup>bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

**16 Ephesians 2:19-22***New King James Version*

<sup>19</sup>Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members of the household of God, <sup>20</sup>having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief cornerstone, <sup>21</sup>in whom the whole building, being fitted together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord, <sup>22</sup>in whom you also are being built together for a dwelling place of God in the Spirit.

**<sup>17</sup>Ephesians 3:10**

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>10</sup>so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

**<sup>18</sup>Ephesians 5:27**

*New American Standard Bible*

that He might present to Himself the church in all her glory, having no spot or wrinkle or any such thing; but that she would be holy and blameless.

*God's Word Translation*

Then he could present it to himself as a glorious church, without any kind of stain or wrinkle-holy and without faults.

*King James Bible*

That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

*Bible in Basic English*

And might take it for himself, a church full of glory, not having one mark or fold or any such thing; but that it might be holy and complete.

*Darby Bible Translation*

that he might present the assembly to himself glorious, having no spot, or wrinkle, or any of such things; but that it might be holy and blameless.

**<sup>19</sup>Revelation 22:17**

*New American Standard Bible*

The Spirit and the bride say, "Come." And let the one who hears say, "Come." And let the one who is thirsty come; let the one who wishes take the water of life without cost.

*God's Word Translation*

The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" Let those who hear this say, "Come!" Let those who are thirsty come! Let those who want the water of life take it as a gift.

*King James Bible*

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

*Bible in Basic English*

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him who gives ear, say, Come. And let him who is in need come; and let everyone desiring it take of the water of life freely.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come; he that will, let him take the water of life freely.



## Chapter 6



# Painting Stripes Doesn't Change the Species

**T**he word “Koinonia” (Fellowship) is used in the Bible, as well as in secular writings of that day, to describe a marriage relationship, co-ownership of land or a ship, and general oneness and commonness of lives and possessions, goals, and dreams. In the High Ground of God’s Heart and Mind, “Fellowship” is meant to be a daily oneness, merged Together in the SECOND Birth<sup>1</sup>, and wrapped in the Oneness of Christ Himself with one another<sup>2</sup>.

So, here’s the rub. If there is no evidence of “fellowship” in 100% of the “church” in the mutuality and interdependence of daily life—in time, and homes, and relationships, jobs, meals, travel, chores, projects, laughing, crying, and vulnerability—then there is no true Fellowship. In such a case, there *will* eventually be ransacked lives that “slipped through the cracks,” leaven throughout the “batch,” lost lives that could have been saved, and no one coming near to their true Potential in Christ.

“You can’t grow an Orange Tree in Alaska.”<sup>3</sup> (More<sup>4</sup> on that.) And so, without intertwined daily relationship, Koinonia, you have barely more

chance<sup>5</sup> of helping your own children<sup>6</sup> choose Jesus than you do trying to save the life of someone else's child across town who you bump into once a week. If we assume that Jesus would want us to help a person bought by His Blood, who is desperately diminished by stubborn sin<sup>7</sup>, but there is little or no Fellowship in His Family, then there will be little recognition—or remedy.

In lacking the very Life of Jesus, it seems paradoxical that an organization would still call itself a *Christ-ian* “church,” ya know? We’ve heard from Christians in 120 countries or more who say that because of bad teaching, improperly motivated “leadership,” and catering to human flesh, Biblical Koinonia is nearly absent in “churches” around the world. His People are suffering dearly for this lack.

Since this lack of relationship in “churches” (and the subsequent quenching of the “Kingdom of Priests”<sup>8</sup> by religious machinery, program, and hierarchy) has become so well documented in the last ten to fifteen years, some efforts have been made to “reinvent” the System. “Cell churches”; “House churches”; “Kinship groups”; “Simple church”; and a dozen more fancy names and down-sizing techniques of assigning groups, ordaining miniature leaders, and trying to “involve more people”—have all been sold and attempted. All sorts of attempts have been made to paint stripes on the donkey to create a zebra. But, as long as men will not *daily lay down their lives for their brothers*—in vulnerability and risk and self-sacrifice, lifting up Jesus as LORD in every circumstance, “whether food or drink”—then nothing can or will change. Leaven will still fill the batch and the enemy will continue to trash marriages and teens and businessmen and women.

There really IS a Solution in Father’s heart and mind. We MUST learn from the “shadow”<sup>9</sup> of biological “family.”<sup>10</sup> We must consider the intimate, nurturing, daily relationships that a natural “once-born” family would always desire to have, in order to comprehend what “Second-Birth Family”<sup>11</sup> is meant to be. As long as we, under the guise of “freedom,” continue to justify being “deadbeat dads” and “deadbeat moms” in the church, then no fancy-named gimmicks are worth the whiteboard and internet forum they were hatched upon.

Is it really “freedom” to watch others die and care only about ourselves? No, that is the most pitiable form of slavery—bondage to self-love. That is not Christianity at all to watch lifelessly as 50% of all marriages and 80% of

all teens are destroyed in the “churches” that do not have Koinonia as their defining quality. Religion, without daily Redemptive Christ-Life, can only be “a form of godliness denying the power of God.” And, no books marketed about clever ways to “do church” while leaving “men” in control will do any more than make a few men very wealthy—at the Lambs’ expense.

Until we are willing to “die daily” for our brothers and sisters, and are “*in the pains of childbirth until Christ is formed in them*,” there is nothing “more” to be had in our “church experience.” There is no “better mousetrap” or “innovation” in “how to HAVE church.” There never will be. Without Koinonia as its defining<sup>12</sup> quality, Jesus’ Bride remains unprepared<sup>13</sup> for His Return. As long as we panel our own houses<sup>14</sup>—instead of building His with our evenings and weekends, our jobs, our errands, and our very substance, “*from the least to the greatest*”—we will only be “rearranging the deck chairs on the Titanic.”

In the world of “painted donkeys” there are also the “Kumbaya” groups. These are still attendance-based, centered on individualism and “my ministry” ambitions. Folks still primarily see each other rarely and shallowly, on some special “meeting day.” Their trappings are more non-religious than most, creating somewhat more of a perplexing “illusion of life” to the undiscerning and independent and ambitious. Some people do find a level of contentment in an appointed sing-a-long and “deeeep teaching” beyond the norm. “Let’s all climb on our mats at the set time, for a story and to learn a new song!” And yet, is that what JESUS is satisfied with? Is our goal rrrreally to “have neat meetings” and a “cool lifestyle” on the ranch? Or is it to know God better, and therefore to lay down our lives to help each other overcome painful Life-diminishing sin, that we can be all He desires us to be in His Son? If there is any refusal to obey God in Heb.3:12-14<sup>15</sup>, these Verses themselves teach that the result of such disobedience is that leaven *always* fills whatever “batch” would disobey these Verses. It’s guaranteed by God (it sounds like by reading the Verses). Everyone is affected, even if they don’t realize it. “*A little leaven leavens the WHOLE batch*,” as God said (1Cor.5:6<sup>16</sup>, Gal.5:9<sup>17</sup>, Joshua 7<sup>18</sup>). “I have no need of you until the assigned meeting day”<sup>19</sup> is just NOT Daddy’s Plan.

GOD said we DO have to need one another. Why is that so bad if it is what HE planned and ordained? He put His “Treasure in earthen vessels” as part of His Plan. He Himself deposited Gifts within humans, parts of His Son deposited throughout in His Body. God said these gifts in humans,

people with real names, are necessary for “growth,” and “stature,” and unity, and being “no longer infants tossed to and fro,” and intimate knowledge of the Son of God, and many other things. Read Heb.3:12-14<sup>20</sup> and all of Eph.4:11-16<sup>21</sup> and Romans 12<sup>22</sup>, and then see if you can still say God intended that we function as “just me and Gawd.” I don’t think that’s what HE said. His PLAN is for us to be mutually dependent<sup>23</sup>, putting each other’s hands into God’s Hand as a Kingdom of Priests, together<sup>24</sup>. GOD says we NEED that, by HIS grand Design.

---

## *Chapter 6 Footnotes*

### **<sup>1</sup>Philippians 2:1-2**

---

#### *New International Version*

<sup>1</sup>If you have any encouragement from being united with Christ, if any comfort from his love, if any fellowship with the Spirit, if any tenderness and compassion, <sup>2</sup>then make my joy complete by being like-minded, having the same love, being one in spirit and purpose.

### **<sup>2</sup>Corinthians 13:14**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

May the Lord Jesus Christ’s good will, God’s love, and the Holy Spirit’s presence be with all of you!

#### *King James Bible*

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the harmony of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

### **<sup>3</sup>“Crisis” In His Churches??**

---

[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Crises](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Crises)

### **<sup>4</sup>The Intermingled, Fused, Together Christ-Life...Today**

---

[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Intermingled](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Intermingled)

### **<sup>5</sup>True Hope for a New Millennium**

---

[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Hope](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Hope)

## **6Barna Update, September 24, 2007**

---

[www.barna.org/FlexPage.aspx?Page=BarnaUpdate&BarnaUpdateID=280](http://www.barna.org/FlexPage.aspx?Page=BarnaUpdate&BarnaUpdateID=280)

(Ventura, CA) – As the nation's culture changes in diverse ways, one of the most significant shifts is the declining reputation of Christianity, especially among young Americans. A new study by The Barna Group conducted among 16- to 29-year-olds shows that a new generation is more skeptical of and resistant to Christianity than were people of the same age just a decade ago.

The study of Christianity's slipping image is explored in a new book, entitled *unChristian*, by David Kinnaman, the president of The Barna Group. The study is a result of collaboration between Kinnaman and Gabe Lyons of the Fermi Project.

The study shows that 16- to 29-year-olds exhibit a greater degree of criticism toward Christianity than did previous generations when they were at the same stage of life. In fact, in just a decade, many of the Barna measures of the Christian image have shifted substantially downward, fueled in part by a growing sense of disengagement and disillusionment among young people. Just 16% of non-Christians in their late teens and twenties said they have a "good impression" of Christianity. Only 3% of 16- to 29-year-old non-Christians express favorable views of evangelicals. This means that today's young non-Christians are eight times less likely to experience positive associations toward evangelicals than were non-Christians of the Boomer generation (25%). 91% of the nation's evangelicals believe that "Americans are becoming more hostile and negative toward Christianity." Among senior pastors, half contend that "ministry is more difficult than ever before because people are increasingly hostile and negative toward Christianity." Among young non-Christians, nine out of the top 12 perceptions were negative. Common negative perceptions include that present-day Christianity is judgmental (87%), hypocritical (85%), old-fashioned (78%), and too involved in politics (75%) - representing large proportions of young outsiders who attach these negative labels to Christians. The most common favorable perceptions were that Christianity teaches the same basic ideas as other religions (82%), has good values and principles (76%), is friendly (71%), and is a faith they respect (55%). Even among young Christians, many of the negative images generated significant traction. Half of young churchgoers said they perceive Christianity to be judgmental, hypocritical, and too political. One-third said it was old-fashioned and out of touch with reality.

## **7Addictions, Strongholds-Versus the Power and Wisdom of Our God and His Christ**

---

[www.HisWounds.com/Addictions](http://www.HisWounds.com/Addictions)

## **81 Corinthians 14:23-32**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>23</sup>Therefore if the whole church comes together in one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those who are uninformed or unbelievers, will they not say that you are out of your mind? <sup>24</sup>But if all prophesy, and an unbeliever or an uninformed person comes in, he is convinced by all, he is convicted by all. <sup>25</sup>And thus the secrets of his heart are revealed; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God and report that God is truly among you.

<sup>26</sup>How is it then, brethren? Whenever you come together, each of you has a psalm, has a teaching, has a tongue, has a revelation, has an interpretation. Let all things be done for

edification. <sup>27</sup>If anyone speaks in a tongue, let there be two or at the most three, each in turn, and let one interpret. <sup>28</sup>But if there is no interpreter, let him keep silent in church, and let him speak to himself and to God. <sup>29</sup>Let two or three prophets speak, and let the others judge. <sup>30</sup> But if anything is revealed to another who sits by, let the first keep silent. <sup>31</sup>For you can all prophesy one by one, that all may learn and all may be encouraged. <sup>32</sup>And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

---

### **<sup>9</sup>Colossians 2:17**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

things which are a mere shadow of what is to come; but the substance belongs to Christ.

#### *God's Word Translation*

These are a shadow of the things to come, but the body that casts the shadow belongs to Christ.

#### *King James Bible*

Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

For these are an image of the things which are to come; but the body is Christ's.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

---

### **<sup>10</sup>Mark 3:32-34**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>32</sup>And a multitude was sitting around Him; and they said to Him, "Look, Your mother and Your brothers are outside seeking You."

<sup>33</sup>But He answered them, saying, "Who is My mother, or My brothers?" <sup>34</sup>And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, "Here are My mother and My brothers!"

---

### **<sup>11</sup>Building Principles—Leaders' Meetings**

[www.HouseChurch.com/Leaders](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Leaders)

---

### **<sup>12</sup>1 Corinthians 12:12-13:7**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>12</sup>For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ. <sup>13</sup>For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body—whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free—and have all been made to drink into one Spirit. <sup>14</sup>For in fact the body is not one member but many.

<sup>15</sup>If the foot should say, "Because I am not a hand, I am not of the body," is it therefore not of the body? <sup>16</sup>And if the ear should say, "Because I am not an eye, I am not of the body," is it therefore not of the body? <sup>17</sup>If the whole body were an eye, where would be the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where would be the smelling? <sup>18</sup>But now God has set the members, each one of them, in the body just as He pleased. <sup>19</sup>And if they were all one member, where would the body be?

<sup>20</sup>But now indeed there are many members, yet one body. <sup>21</sup>And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; nor again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you." <sup>22</sup>No, much rather, those members of the body which seem to be weaker are

necessary. <sup>23</sup>And those members of the body which we think to be less honorable, on these we bestow greater honor; and our unpresentable parts have greater modesty, <sup>24</sup>but our presentable parts have no need. But God composed the body, having given greater honor to that part which lacks it, <sup>25</sup>that there should be no schism in the body, but that the members should have the same care for one another. <sup>26</sup>And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

<sup>27</sup>Now you are the body of Christ, and members individually. <sup>28</sup>And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, administrations, varieties of tongues. <sup>29</sup>Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all workers of miracles? <sup>30</sup>Do all have gifts of healings? Do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret? <sup>31</sup>But earnestly desire the best gifts. And yet I show you a more excellent way.

<sup>1</sup>Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. <sup>2</sup>And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. <sup>3</sup>And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing.

<sup>4</sup>Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; <sup>5</sup>does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; <sup>6</sup>does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; <sup>7</sup>bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

### **<sup>13</sup>Revelation 19:7**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

“Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him, for the marriage of the Lamb has come and His bride has made herself ready.”

#### *God’s Word Translation*

Let us rejoice, be happy, and give him glory because it’s time for the marriage of the lamb. His bride has made herself ready.

#### *King James Bible*

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

Let us be glad with delight, and let us give glory to him: because the time is come for the Lamb to be married, and his wife has made herself ready.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

Let us rejoice and exult, and give him glory; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife has made herself ready.

## <sup>14</sup>Haggai 1

### *New King James Version*

<sup>1</sup>In the second year of King Darius, in the sixth month, on the first day of the month, the word of the LORD came by Haggai the prophet to Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, saying: <sup>2</sup>Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying: "This people says, 'The time has not come, the time that the LORD's house should be built.'"

<sup>3</sup>Then the word of the LORD came by Haggai the prophet, saying, <sup>4</sup>"Is it time for you yourselves to dwell in your paneled houses, and this temple to lie in ruins?" <sup>5</sup>Now therefore, thus says the LORD of hosts: "Consider your ways! <sup>6</sup>You have sown much, and bring in little; You eat, but do not have enough; You drink, but you are not filled with drink; You clothe yourselves, but no one is warm; And he who earns wages, Earns wages to put into a bag with holes."

<sup>7</sup>Thus says the LORD of hosts: "Consider your ways! <sup>8</sup>Go up to the mountains and bring wood and build the temple, that I may take pleasure in it and be glorified," says the LORD. <sup>9</sup>"You looked for much, but indeed it came to little; and when you brought it home, I blew it away. Why?" says the LORD of hosts. "Because of My house that is in ruins, while every one of you runs to his own house. <sup>10</sup>Therefore the heavens above you withhold the dew, and the earth withholds its fruit. <sup>11</sup>For I called for a drought on the land and the mountains, on the grain and the new wine and the oil, on whatever the ground brings forth, on men and livestock, and on all the labor of your hands."

<sup>12</sup>Then Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, and Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, with all the remnant of the people, obeyed the voice of the LORD their God, and the words of Haggai the prophet, as the LORD their God had sent him; and the people feared the presence of the LORD. <sup>13</sup>Then Haggai, the LORD's messenger, spoke the LORD's message to the people, saying, "I am with you, says the LORD." <sup>14</sup>So the LORD stirred up the spirit of Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and the spirit of Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, and the spirit of all the remnant of the people; and they came and worked on the house of the LORD of hosts, their God, <sup>15</sup>on the twenty-fourth day of the sixth month, in the second year of King Darius.

## <sup>15</sup>Hebrews 3:13

### *New American Standard Bible*

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is still called "Today," so that none of you will be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

### *God's Word Translation*

Encourage each other every day while you have the opportunity. If you do this, none of you will be deceived by sin and become stubborn.

### *King James Bible*

But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

### *Bible in Basic English*

But give comfort to one another every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin:

### *Darby Bible Translation*

But encourage yourselves each day, as long as it is called To-day, that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

**161 Corinthians 5:6**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Your boasting is not good. Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough?

*God's Word Translation*

It's not good for you to brag. Don't you know that a little yeast spreads through the whole batch of dough?

*King James Bible*

Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

*Bible in Basic English*

This pride of yours is not good. Do you not see that a little leaven makes a change in all the mass?

*Darby Bible Translation*

Your boasting is not good. Do ye not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump?

**17Galatians 5:9**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

A little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough.

*God's Word Translation*

A little yeast spreads through the whole batch of dough.

*King James Bible*

A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

*Bible in Basic English*

A little leaven makes a change in all the mass.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

A little leaven corrupteth the whole lump.

*Darby Bible Translation*

A little leaven leavens the whole lump.

**18Joshua 7**

---

*New International Version*

<sup>1</sup>But the Israelites acted unfaithfully in regard to the devoted things ; Achan son of Carmi, the son of Zimri, the son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, took some of them. So the LORD's anger burned against Israel.

<sup>2</sup>Now Joshua sent men from Jericho to Ai, which is near Beth Aven to the east of Bethel, and told them, "Go up and spy out the region." So the men went up and spied out Ai.

<sup>3</sup>When they returned to Joshua, they said, "Not all the people will have to go up against Ai. Send two or three thousand men to take it and do not weary all the people, for only a few men are there." <sup>4</sup>So about three thousand men went up; but they were routed by the men of Ai, <sup>5</sup>who killed about thirty-six of them. They chased the Israelites from the city gate as far as the stone quarries and struck them down on the slopes. At this the hearts of the people melted and became like water.

<sup>6</sup>Then Joshua tore his clothes and fell facedown to the ground before the ark of the LORD, remaining there till evening. The elders of Israel did the same, and sprinkled

dust on their heads. <sup>7</sup>And Joshua said, "Ah, Sovereign LORD, why did you ever bring this people across the Jordan to deliver us into the hands of the Amorites to destroy us? If only we had been content to stay on the other side of the Jordan! <sup>8</sup>O Lord, what can I say, now that Israel has been routed by its enemies? <sup>9</sup>The Canaanites and the other people of the country will hear about this and they will surround us and wipe out our name from the earth. What then will you do for your own great name?"

<sup>10</sup>The LORD said to Joshua, "Stand up! What are you doing down on your face? <sup>11</sup>Israel has sinned; they have violated my covenant, which I commanded them to keep. They have taken some of the devoted things; they have stolen, they have lied, they have put them with their own possessions. <sup>12</sup>That is why the Israelites cannot stand against their enemies; they turn their backs and run because they have been made liable to destruction. I will not be with you anymore unless you destroy whatever among you is devoted to destruction.

<sup>13</sup>"Go, consecrate the people. Tell them, 'Consecrate yourselves in preparation for tomorrow; for this is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: That which is devoted is among you, O Israel. You cannot stand against your enemies until you remove it.

<sup>14</sup>"In the morning, present yourselves tribe by tribe. The tribe that the LORD takes shall come forward clan by clan; the clan that the LORD takes shall come forward family by family; and the family that the LORD takes shall come forward man by man. <sup>15</sup>He who is caught with the devoted things shall be destroyed by fire, along with all that belongs to him. He has violated the covenant of the LORD and has done a disgraceful thing in Israel!"

<sup>16</sup>Early the next morning Joshua had Israel come forward by tribes, and Judah was taken. <sup>17</sup>The clans of Judah came forward, and he took the Zerahites. He had the clan of the Zerahites come forward by families, and Zimri was taken. <sup>18</sup>Joshua had his family come forward man by man, and Achan son of Carmi, the son of Zimri, the son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, was taken.

<sup>19</sup>Then Joshua said to Achan, "My son, give glory to the LORD, the God of Israel, and give him the praise. Tell me what you have done; do not hide it from me."

<sup>20</sup>Achan replied, "It is true! I have sinned against the LORD, the God of Israel. This is what I have done: <sup>21</sup>When I saw in the plunder a beautiful robe from Babylonia, two hundred shekels of silver and a wedge of gold weighing fifty shekels, I coveted them and took them. They are hidden in the ground inside my tent, with the silver underneath."

<sup>22</sup>So Joshua sent messengers, and they ran to the tent, and there it was, hidden in his tent, with the silver underneath. <sup>23</sup>They took the things from the tent, brought them to Joshua and all the Israelites and spread them out before the LORD.

<sup>24</sup>Then Joshua, together with all Israel, took Achan son of Zerah, the silver, the robe, the gold wedge, his sons and daughters, his cattle, donkeys and sheep, his tent and all that he had, to the Valley of Achor. <sup>25</sup>Joshua said, "Why have you brought this trouble on us? The LORD will bring trouble on you today."

Then all Israel stoned him, and after they had stoned the rest, they burned them. <sup>26</sup>Over Achan they heaped up a large pile of rocks, which remains to this day. Then the LORD turned from his fierce anger. Therefore that place has been called the Valley of Achor ever since.

**191 Corinthians 12:21**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; or again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you."

*God's Word Translation*

An eye can't say to a hand, "I don't need you!" Or again, the head can't say to the feet, "I don't need you!"

*King James Bible*

And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

*Bible in Basic English*

And the eye may not say to the hand, I have no need of you: or again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

The eye cannot say to the hand, I have not need of thee; or again, the head to the feet, I have not need of you.

**20 Hebrews 3:13**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is still called "Today," so that none of you will be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

*God's Word Translation*

Encourage each other every day while you have the opportunity. If you do this, none of you will be deceived by sin and become stubborn.

*King James Bible*

But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

*Bible in Basic English*

But give comfort to one another every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin:

*Darby Bible Translation*

But encourage yourselves each day, as long as it is called To-day, that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

**21 The Plumb Line—True Foundations**

---

Ever wonder why 98% of the Christian assemblies (whether non-denominational, denominational, or "house churches") are often wracked with confusion, disharmony, shallowness, heart-breaking leaven, and domineering men (or women) who have no clue—not to mention a revolving door after the "honeymoon" period is over? What does it look like when we let JESUS build HIS church, instead of building one "for" Him? [www.HouseChurch.com/Foundations](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Foundations)

**22 Romans 12:4-10**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>4</sup>For as we have many members in one body, but all the members do not have the same function, <sup>5</sup>so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and individually members of one

another. <sup>6</sup>Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, let us use them: if prophecy, let us prophesy in proportion to our faith; <sup>7</sup>or ministry, let us use it in our ministering; he who teaches, in teaching; <sup>8</sup>he who exhorts, in exhortation; he who gives, with liberality; he who leads, with diligence; he who shows mercy, with cheerfulness.

**<sup>23</sup>Together We'll Walk it Out**

---

Find song at: [www.JesusLifeTogether.com/Together](http://www.JesusLifeTogether.com/Together)

**<sup>24</sup>Healthy, Devoted Relationships**

---

[www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Relationships](http://www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Relationships)

## Chapter 7



# Inescapably Daddy's Heart

**A** major down-side of this lack of Koinonia, lack of “Second-Birth” family relationships with one another, is that we have no capacity to recognize the difference between *rebellion*, versus *unregeneracy*, versus *immaturity*. These three things look similar on the surface, but are all radically different. If we only live “on the surface” with one another, chattering or making cute spiritual remarks at a “called meeting,” our true contribution to each other in an “attendance-based” body will be nearly useless in terms of lives Changing. History shows this, over the generations and the nations. Without tangible relationships in love, there is no passion or wisdom to “*wrestle to present one another complete in Christ*” as Jesus Intends<sup>1</sup>. In addition, our Testimony for Jesus is greatly diminished, regardless of “programs” or “ministries” or “missions.” JESUS said, “*This is HOW all men will know you are My disciples: by the LOVE they SEE<sup>2</sup> you have for one another.*”<sup>3</sup> Stuff can’t be more important than that.

We’ve discussed previously that Fellowship is our Calling for many reasons, not the least of which is that DISFellowship is a Gift from God to HELP His People. But, where lives are not “intertwined” as The Master Himself has ordained—“*a hundred mothers, brothers, sisters,*”<sup>4</sup>—there can be no such thing as “disFellowship.” Some with something to hide<sup>5</sup> will

always resort to excusing their disConnected “Cain” life with “It’s not my concern.” Recall Cain’s murderous excuse<sup>6</sup> as he attempted to hide his own sins, Gen.4:1-17<sup>7</sup>.

Then there are the hyper-spiritual folks with their disobedient and evil ridiculously unBiblical maxims: “God will tell them; I can’t be their Holy Spirit” sorts of “Cain” excuses for lack of love. What if an earthly family lived that way while raising a family. Are you KIDDING?

Still that is a popular hiding place for irresponsibility and lovelessness. It sounds even “spiritual” if one doesn’t have any clue what the Bible actually says about the Teachings and Lifestyle of Jesus. “I have need of no one, because I have Gawd.” To some, because of self-life, it doesn’t matter that JESUS has called them to “*wrestle to present one another complete in Christ*” and be “*in the pains of childbirth until Christ is fully formed in them.*” No matter what God says, they don’t want to be involved “*for their deeds are evil*” (Heb.3:12-14<sup>8</sup>, 2Cor.5:20<sup>9</sup>, 2Cor.4:7<sup>10</sup>, 1Peter 4:11<sup>11</sup>, Mat.28:20<sup>12</sup>).

But Daddy’s Way is “*We being many are ONE.*” Jesus has called, commanded, and enabled us to be *ONE, as He is with the Father!* That is what He said, if we choose to trust and believe Him. Our Union with Christ Himself is what is to define and empower our communion, our fellowship, our koinonia “*on earth as it is in Heaven*” with the Father and one another. He ordained such “fellowship” daily with one another, “*THAT THE WORLD MAY KNOW*” by that love that they observe us having with one another. This is no “wishful thinking” or “optional extra” according to Rabboni Himself, Yesu, Jesus.

---

## Chapter 7 Footnotes

### <sup>1</sup>Ephesians 3:10

#### *New American Standard Bible*

so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

He did this so that now, through the church, he could let the rulers and authorities in heaven know his infinite wisdom.

#### *King James Bible*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

## Chapter 7

### *Bible in Basic English*

So that now to the rulers and the authorities in the heavens might be made clear through the church the wide-shining wisdom of God,

### *Darby Bible Translation*

in order that now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenlies might be made known through the assembly the all-various wisdom of God,

### **<sup>2</sup>John 13:35**

---

#### *Amplified Bible*

<sup>35</sup>By this shall all [men] know that you are My disciples, if you love one another [if you keep on showing love among yourselves].

### **<sup>3</sup>New International Version**

---

#### *Romans 12:10*

Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Honor one another above yourselves.

#### *1 John 3:11*

This is the message you heard from the beginning: We should love one another.

#### *John 13:34*

A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.

#### *Malachi 2:10*

Have we not all one Father? Did not one God create us? Why do we profane the covenant of our fathers by breaking faith with one another?

#### *2 John 1:5*

And now, dear lady, I am not writing you a new command but one we have had from the beginning. I ask that we love one another.

#### *2 Corinthians 13:12*

Greet one another with a holy kiss.

#### *Ephesians 5:21*

Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

#### *1 Peter 4:9*

Offer hospitality to one another without grumbling.

#### *Ephesians 4:2*

Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.

#### *1 Thessalonians 5:11*

Therefore encourage one another and build each other up, just as in fact you are doing.

#### *Ephesians 4:32*

Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

#### *1 Peter 5:14*

Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to all of you who are in Christ.

#### *Romans 15:7*

Accept one another, then, just as Christ accepted you, in order to bring praise to God.

*Hebrews 10:24*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.

*Zechariah 7:9*

“This is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘Administer true justice; show mercy and compassion to one another.’

*1 Corinthians 5:12*

What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside?

*1 Peter 3:8*

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; be sympathetic, love as brothers, be compassionate and humble.

*Hebrews 3:13*

But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness.

*Hebrews 10:24-25*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds. Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another—and all the more as you see the Day approaching.

**<sup>4</sup>New American Standard Bible**

---

*Mark 10:28-31*

<sup>28</sup>Peter began to say to Him, “Behold, we have left everything and followed You.”

<sup>29</sup>Jesus said, “Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or farms, for My sake and for the gospel’s sake,

<sup>30</sup>but that he will receive a hundred times as much now in the present age, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and farms, along with persecutions; and in the age to come, eternal life.

<sup>31</sup>“But many who are first will be last, and the last, first.”

*Matthew 19:27-29*

<sup>27</sup>Then Peter said to Him, “Behold, we have left everything and followed You; what then will there be for us?”

<sup>28</sup>And Jesus said to them, “Truly I say to you, that you who have followed Me, in the regeneration when the Son of Man will sit on His glorious throne, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

<sup>29</sup>And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or farms for My name’s sake, will receive many times as much, and will inherit eternal life.

*Luke 18:28-30*

<sup>28</sup>Peter said, “Behold, we have left our own homes and followed You.

<sup>29</sup>And He said to them, “Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God,

<sup>30</sup>who will not receive many times as much at this time and in the age to come, eternal life.”

**<sup>5</sup>John 3:19**

*New American Standard Bible*

“This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil.

*God’s Word Translation*

This is why people are condemned: The light came into the world. Yet, people loved the dark rather than the light because their actions were evil.

*King James Bible*

And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

*Bible in Basic English*

And this is the test by which men are judged: the light has come into the world and men have more love for the dark than for the light, because their acts are evil.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And this is the judgment, that light is come into the world, and men have loved darkness rather than light; for their works were evil.

**<sup>6</sup>Am I My Brother’s Keeper? by C. H. SPURGEON (1834-1892)**

[www.GodThots.com/Spurgeon](http://www.GodThots.com/Spurgeon)

**<sup>7</sup>Genesis 4:9**

*New American Standard Bible*

Then the LORD said to Cain, “Where is Abel your brother?” And he said, “I do not know. Am I my brother’s keeper?”

*God’s Word Translation*

The LORD asked Cain, “Where is your brother Abel?” “I don’t know,” he answered. “Am I supposed to take care of my brother?”

*King James Bible*

And the LORD said unto Cain, Where is Abel thy brother? And he said, I know not: Am I my brother’s keeper?

*Bible in Basic English*

And the Lord said to Cain, Where is your brother Abel? And he said, I have no idea: am I my brother’s keeper?

*Darby Bible Translation*

And Jehovah said to Cain, Where is Abel thy brother? And he said, I know not: am I my brother’s keeper?

**<sup>8</sup>Hebrews 3:13**

*New American Standard Bible*

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is still called “Today,” so that none of you will be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

*God’s Word Translation*

Encourage each other every day while you have the opportunity. If you do this, none of you will be deceived by sin and become stubborn.

*King James Bible*

But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

*Bible in Basic English*

But give comfort to one another every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin:

*Darby Bible Translation*

But encourage yourselves each day, as long as it is called To-day, that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

**92 Corinthians 5:20**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were making an appeal through us; we beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God.

*God's Word Translation*

Therefore, we are Christ's representatives, and through us God is calling you. We beg you on behalf of Christ to become reunited with God.

*King James Bible*

Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

*Bible in Basic English*

So we are the representatives of Christ, as if God was making a request to you through us: we make our request to you, in the name of Christ, be at peace with God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

We are ambassadors therefore for Christ, God as it were beseeching by us, we entreat for Christ, Be reconciled to God.

**102 Corinthians 4:7**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, so that the surpassing greatness of the power will be of God and not from ourselves;

*God's Word Translation*

Our bodies are made of clay, yet we have the treasure of the Good News in them. This shows that the superior power of this treasure belongs to God and doesn't come from us.

*King James Bible*

But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

*Bible in Basic English*

But we have this wealth in vessels of earth, so that it may be seen that the power comes not from us but from God;

*Darby Bible Translation*

But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the surpassingness of the power may be of God, and not from us:

**<sup>11</sup>Peter 4:11**

*New American Standard Bible*

Whoever speaks, is to do so as one who is speaking the utterances of God; whoever serves is to do so as one who is serving by the strength which God supplies; so that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom belongs the glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen.

*God's Word Translation*

Whoever speaks must speak God's words. Whoever serves must serve with the strength God supplies so that in every way God receives glory through Jesus Christ. Glory and power belong to Jesus Christ forever and ever! Amen.

*King James Bible*

If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

*Bible in Basic English*

If anyone has anything to say, let it be as the words of God; if anyone has the desire to be the servant of others, let him do it in the strength which is given by God; so that in all things God may have the glory through Jesus Christ, whose are the glory and the power for ever.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

If any man speak, let him speak, as the words of God. If any man minister, let him do it, as of the power, which God administereth: that in all things God may be honoured through Jesus Christ: to whom is glory and empire for ever and ever. Amen.

**<sup>12</sup>Matthew 28:20**

*New American Standard Bible*

teaching them to observe all that I commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age."

*God's Word Translation*

Teach them to do everything I have commanded you. "And remember that I am always with you until the end of time."

*King James Bible*

Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

*Bible in Basic English*

Teaching them to keep all the rules which I have given you: and see, I am ever with you, even to the end of the world.

*Darby Bible Translation*

teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have enjoined you. And behold, I am with you all the days, until the completion of the age.



## Chapter 8



# Even *BABY* Christians Know This, and Live It

**W**e've already seen<sup>1</sup> that when the church is living in the Spirit, even ONE DAY OLD baby Christians know<sup>1</sup> to be committed to each other on a daily basis. It's not that complicated when your life belongs now to JESUS—which is actually what Conversion is, according to the Bible everyone in true Christendom believes God wrote.

Another example that is truly interesting is the “worst church recorded in detail in the New Testament”—Corinth. Brought to Jesus just months earlier, in the wicked seaport of Corinth, most of these baby Christians knew nothing of Jewish life. They were washed from some of the filthiest and most addictive sins<sup>2</sup> imaginable, and were still surrounded by a city filled with great darkness. As baby Christians, with little or no background in Yahweh or His Torah and the Prophets, they had enough “problems” that some from Corinth traveled many, many miles to “tattle-tale”<sup>3</sup> to their friend and daddy<sup>4</sup>, Paul. We know Paul wrote back and corrected many issues with them. Paul states in a second letter that the Corinthians did a LOT<sup>5</sup> of faith-filled repenting after his first letter. We know that Paul, though he wasn't in the city, told them to break Fellowship<sup>6</sup> with a man, and they did so.

The religious grifters of our day have tried to excuse the lukewarmness of modern christianity by citing Corinth as an example of how people can be

absurdly sinful, and still (they say) be “okay with God.” But what a Biblical mistake. An embarrassing surprise awaits anyone who would attempt to use Corinth to excuse mediocrity! Many Christians have been swindled into practicing lukewarmness with such fallacious and dark “reasoning” as “Corinth was sinful, and THAT was okay with God,” when the Scriptures teach exactly the opposite.

Even these new baby Christians in this wicked city had MUCH more going for them than the average “congregation” in today’s world. It doesn’t matter which of today’s “big name speakers” hang their shingle at an attendance-based organization, or “how good the music is.” Corinth was better in most ways God cares about than today’s religious organizations. Even though there are many fine and genuine Christians at today’s unBiblical expressions of Christianity, many lives are needlessly lost because these organizations modeled in Constantine’s era and later Catholicism bear more resemblance to a club rather than to Acts 2:42-47<sup>7</sup>. The potential growth of sincere saints is alarmingly and measurably stunted by this man-made, meeting-based false way of “approaching God.”

Sure, Corinth might be known as the most confused church recorded in detail in the Bible. But if they were, in fact, the “worst-case scenario” of what could be called a “church”<sup>8</sup> by God, then there must be very few<sup>9</sup> true churches<sup>10</sup> remaining in the world today by comparison. Compared to even “lowly” Corinth, most “Lampstands”<sup>11</sup> would have been removed<sup>12</sup>.

In spite of their babyhood, Corinth had an IMPRESSIVE Together-LIFE in Jesus. How do we know this, beyond any question? Because in spite of their “issues” from immaturity, we know that in Corinth they had what only a Church leaning on Jesus as their Foundation can have. They had FELLOWSHIP with God and one another. And because of that, even their “difficult problems” could be Solved<sup>13</sup>. We know that in spite of their immaturities and lingering sins, they had true daily Fellowship with one another. The Scriptures prove that the magnitude of their lives together far eclipses almost everything in today’s religious world, no matter the programs, celebrities, missions, schools, or oratory.

Corinth was a picture, we’ll see, of very normal people. As today, in God’s 1Cor.12 Daily Together-Life, some who may never have been “impressive” *are still very impressively protected and Saved*. They are walking Miracles, comparing where they are, to where they would have been. His People

were, and will be, daily laying down their lives for one another, bearing one another's burdens, confessing sins one to another, and encouraging one another daily. JESUS said that Quality of Life would be "HOW all men would know" that we belong to HIM. It's the difference.

So, here they are. The most absurd, sin-encumbered, immature church that we know much about in the New Testament, but with a thousand times more TRUE Biblical Fellowship than almost any religious group in today's christendom. That's almost humorous, if it weren't so true. Corinth is a powerful Testimony of the "bare minimum" of Biblical fellowship. What they had, even with all of their immaturity and baggage, MUST have been a thousand times better than most organizations today. How do we know this from the Bible? They had a Quality of Life in Corinth that almost no "churches" today can even pretend to claim. How do we know? You may have to ponder thoughtfully this Treasure of the Word of God, but it is inescapable if you watch and pray. How do we know something extraordinary was happening as a "bare minimum" amongst those bought by Jesus and called a "church"? Because the apostle (1Cor.5, 2Cor.2, 2Cor.7) said that to "not eat" and "not associate" with a man, to DISFellowship him, was nearly killing him<sup>14</sup>. Since he had repented they should quickly rush back to embrace him. The man who had been stubbornly clinging to his sin was now turning back to Jesus, His Life and Love! What motivated him when he had almost sealed a dark fate for himself with his stubbornness and pride, according to Paul and Chloe? What caused the man to turn his life totally around? The Saints in Corinth would no longer eat or hang around with him, or allow him to be part of their lives, or their children's lives. It's pretty obvious you can't cause someone "immense agony" by taking away from them something they never had, or never cared about!

What religious body in attendance-based, clergy/laity cultural christendom of today could avoid getting snickered at if they said to a person, "We're not going to hang out with you anymore." In most every case (except for the reactions of embarrassment or indignation), there would be only a yawn, and a move to another "place" to "attend." If there IS no "*hundred mothers, brothers, sisters*" level of daily relationship... if there IS no "*THESE are my mothers and brothers and sisters*" quality of daily 1Cor.12 Together-Life—then removing "it" would only be a farce. DisFellowship is powerless when there is no Fellowship that is real and deep, and life-transforming in loyalty and love.

There can be no meaningful and motivating “disFellowship” if there has been no intertwined families and lives and time and love. EVEN in Corinth, even amongst BABY CHRISTIANS, even with “the WORST CHURCH ON RECORD”... there was clearly a Quality of Life that was breathtaking and intimate. With all of their lack, they HAD LIFE IN JESUS, TOGETHER.

There was plenty of room, obviously, for further growth in all ways. The letter from Paul made no mistake about that. But their BASELINE for Existence in Jesus together, their Koinonia, was higher than almost anything in the world today. Jesus has been sloppily relegated to “attendance” on a “special day”—and “everything else is extra.”

Whatever happened to “ALL of our hearts, ALL of our souls, ALL of our minds, and ALL of our strength”? It’s still His Plan and still the look<sup>15</sup> of His Bride. ☺

In an “attendance-based” or “Kumbaya” group, sin is covered over, excused, ignored, or justified. In Corinth, by contrast, they made massive changes<sup>16</sup> based on just one letter from a brother from another city (2Cor.7:8-16<sup>17</sup>). Can we embrace that kind of passion to “*present one another complete in Christ*”? It’s just basic Christianity. It’s CHRIST-likeness. It’s LOVE to do all things possible to turn a man or woman from lukewarmness, or any other sin. And one of God’s Ordained and Commanded “tools” to help is first Koinonia, and then disKoinonia, should it become necessary.

The disciples in Corinth refused to eat with the man who would not stop “*crucifying Jesus afresh*” with his sin. They would not let the man continue to play with their children, or be in their homes. Removing him from their lives could only be tragic to him if they were very, very close, relationally. Sending him to “*excessive despair*” for removing his access to their daily lives and children and games and travels and meals is only possible—if he knew well and CARED about their children, and had been a frequent part of their homes. The man they were forced to separate from in disKoinonia got no more invitations to go for a walk, or shop with them in the market, or work on projects together. Their obedient and courageous refusal to eat with him or “fellowship” with him any longer—was the TOOL that God had ordained to make a legitimately Twice-born, but stubborn and foolish disciple turn away from his destructive sins.

Notice the “Key” though: If they did not HAVE such intimate fellowship with one another (even as lacking as it was according to Paul’s rebukes

and corrections), their refusal to “associate” with him and to “expel” him from their daily lives could *not* have had this DRAMATIC effect. He was on the verge of being “overwhelmed by excessive sorrow” by his loss from them. Paul begged them to rush back to him, in forgiveness, after he had repented.

Corinth. They are nearly all baby<sup>18</sup> christians; few are more than 36 months old in Christ, and many or most are from pagan godless backgrounds. And yet, the most natural thing for someone who is Twice-Born is to be passionately penitent<sup>19</sup> and responsive to truth<sup>20</sup>, even if only seen in a letter from a brother currently in another country. This ragtag group of Blood-bought, Christ-indwelt<sup>21</sup> new Christians knew how to love and “walk as Jesus walked”<sup>22</sup> at a deeper level than “attendance-based” christendom ever can or will. THEY had Koinonia with the Father and with “the church that the gates of Hell cannot prevail against.”

With the addictive sins of their backgrounds— 1Cor.6:9-11<sup>23</sup>—it is no wonder that these babies (1Cor.3:1<sup>24</sup>, 11:17-20<sup>25</sup>) needed some direction and help (Eph.4:11-20<sup>26</sup>, 1Cor.12:21<sup>27</sup>) to get their lives moving towards Jesus in a way that would bring Him honor and pleasure. But, don’t miss this Point: Unlike most religious bodies, in spite of immaturity and baggage and virtually no time as Christians after wicked lives in a wicked city—they STILL had very deep “one another”<sup>28</sup> relationships as Jesus called and empowered them to be one with Him and each other. “A hundred mothers, brothers, sisters” involved DAILY (1Cor.12<sup>29</sup>, Heb.3:12-14<sup>30</sup>, Acts 2:42-47<sup>31</sup>, Eph.4:16<sup>32</sup>, Phlp.1:27-28<sup>33</sup>, 2:2<sup>34</sup>, Gal.4:19<sup>35</sup>, 1Thes.2:3-12<sup>36</sup>, 3:1-4:2<sup>37</sup>, Mat.16:18<sup>38</sup>, Eph.3:10<sup>39</sup>, 1Tim.3:15<sup>40</sup>). It’s “God’s Intent” that His Church *be* His Body, connected as vitally and as daily as your body parts are to one another. He intends for us to be “daily” joined and contributing in vital real ways to “one another.” And as the Master declared, “THIS is HOW all men will know you are MY disciples.”

---

### Chapter 8 Footnotes

#### <sup>1</sup>Acts 2:36-47

*New American Standard Bible*

---

<sup>36</sup>“Therefore let all the house of Israel know for certain that God has made Him both Lord and Christ—this Jesus whom you crucified.” Now when they heard this, they were pierced to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, “Brethren, what shall we do?” Peter said to them, “Repent, and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off, as many as the

Lord our God will call to Himself.” And with many other words he solemnly testified and kept on exhorting them, saying, “Be saved from this perverse generation!” So then, those who had received his word were baptized; and that day there were added about three thousand souls. They were continually devoting themselves to the apostles’ teaching and to fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer. Everyone kept feeling a sense of awe; and many wonders and signs were taking place through the apostles.

And all those who had believed were together and had all things in common; and they began selling their property and possessions and were sharing them with all, as anyone might have need. Day by day continuing with one mind in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, they were taking their meals together with gladness and sincerity of heart, praising God and having favor with all the people. And the Lord was adding to their number day by day those who were being saved.”

### **<sup>21</sup> Corinthians 6:9-11**

#### *New International Version*

Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homosexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God. And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

### **<sup>31</sup> Corinthians 1:11**

#### *New International Version*

My brothers, some from Chloe’s household have informed me that there are quarrels among you.

### **<sup>41</sup> Corinthians 4:15**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

For if you were to have countless tutors in Christ, yet you would not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

You may have countless Christian guardians, but you don’t have many spiritual fathers. I became your father in the Christian life by telling you the Good News about Christ Jesus.

#### *King James Bible*

For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

For even if you had ten thousand teachers in Christ, you have not more than one father: for in Christ Jesus I have given birth to you through the good news.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

For if ye should have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet not many fathers; for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the glad tidings.

## **<sup>5</sup>2 Corinthians 7:11**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

For behold what earnestness this very thing, this godly sorrow, has produced in you: what vindication of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what longing, what zeal, what avenging of wrong! In everything you demonstrated yourselves to be innocent in the matter.

### *God's Word Translation*

When you became distressed in a godly way, look at how much devotion it caused you to have. You were ready to clear yourselves of the charges against you. You were disgusted with the wrong that had been done. You were afraid. You wanted to see us. You wanted to show your concern for us. You were ready to punish the wrong that had been done. In every way you have demonstrated that you are people who are innocent in this matter.

### *King James Bible*

For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

### *Bible in Basic English*

For you see what care was produced in you by this very sorrow of yours before God, what clearing of yourselves, what wrath against sin, what fear, what desire, what serious purpose, what punishment. In everything you have made it clear that you are free from sin in this business.

## **<sup>6</sup>1 Corinthians 5:3-5**

---

### *Amplified Bible*

As for my attitude, though I am absent [from you] in body, I am present in spirit, and I have already decided and passed judgment, as if actually present, <sup>4</sup>In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, on the man who has committed such a deed. When you and my own spirit are met together with the power of our Lord Jesus, <sup>5</sup>You are to deliver this man over to Satan for physical discipline [to destroy carnal lusts which prompted him to incest], that [his] spirit may [yet] be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

## **<sup>7</sup>Acts 2:44**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

And all those who had believed were together and had all things in common;

### *God's Word Translation*

All the believers kept meeting together, and they shared everything with each other.

### *King James Bible*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

### *Bible in Basic English*

And all those who were of the faith kept together, and had all things in common;

### *Darby Bible Translation*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common,

## **<sup>8</sup>1 Corinthians 1:2**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

To the church of God which is at Corinth, to those who have been sanctified in Christ Jesus, saints by calling, with all who in every place call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours.

### *God's Word Translation*

To God's church that was made holy by Christ Jesus and called to be God's holy people in the city of Corinth and to people everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

### *King James Bible*

Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both their's and our's.

### *Bible in Basic English*

To the church of God which is in Corinth, to those who have been made holy in Christ Jesus, saints by the selection of God, with all those who in every place give honour to the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours.

### *Darby Bible Translation*

To the assembly of God which is in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus, called saints, with all that in every place call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, both theirs and ours.

## **<sup>9</sup>Are YOU Exclusive?**

---

[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Exclusive](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Exclusive)

## **<sup>10</sup>“Community”?? “House Church”?? OR, is there still HIGHER GROUND?**

---

[www.HouseChurch.com/Community](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Community)

## **<sup>11</sup>Green Beret Brotherhood**

---

[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Brotherhood](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Brotherhood)

## **<sup>12</sup>Revelation 2:5**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

‘Therefore remember from where you have fallen, and repent and do the deeds you did at first; or else I am coming to you and will remove your lampstand out of its place— unless you repent.

### *God's Word Translation*

Remember how far you have fallen. Return to me and change the way you think and act, and do what you did at first. I will come to you and take your lamp stand from its place if you don't change.

### *King James Bible*

Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

### *Bible in Basic English*

So keep in mind where you were at first, and be changed in heart and do the first

works; or I will come to you, and will take away your light from its place, if your hearts are not changed.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works: but if not, I am coming to thee, and I will remove thy lamp out of its place, except thou shalt repent.

**<sup>13</sup>2 Corinthians 7:10-16**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>10</sup>For godly sorrow produces repentance leading to salvation, not to be regretted; but the sorrow of the world produces death. <sup>11</sup>For observe this very thing, that you sorrowed in a godly manner: What diligence it produced in you, what clearing of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what vehement desire, what zeal, what vindication! In all things you proved yourselves to be clear in this matter. <sup>12</sup>Therefore, although I wrote to you, I did not do it for the sake of him who had done the wrong, nor for the sake of him who suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear to you.

<sup>13</sup>Therefore we have been comforted in your comfort. And we rejoiced exceedingly more for the joy of Titus, because his spirit has been refreshed by you all. <sup>14</sup>For if in anything I have boasted to him about you, I am not ashamed. But as we spoke all things to you in truth, even so our boasting to Titus was found true. <sup>15</sup>And his affections are greater for you as he remembers the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him. <sup>16</sup>Therefore I rejoice that I have confidence in you in everything.

**<sup>14</sup>2 Corinthians 2:7**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

so that on the contrary you should rather forgive and comfort him, otherwise such a one might be overwhelmed by excessive sorrow.

*God's Word Translation*

So now forgive and comfort him. Such distress could overwhelm someone like that if he's not forgiven and comforted.

*King James Bible*

So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

*Bible in Basic English*

So that now, on the other hand, it is right for him to have forgiveness and comfort from you, for fear that his sorrow may be over-great.

*Darby Bible Translation*

so that on the contrary ye should rather shew grace and encourage, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with excessive grief.

**<sup>15</sup>Ephesians 5:25-27**

---

*New International Version*

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

## **162 Corinthians 2:9**

---

### *Amplified Bible*

For this was my purpose in writing you, to test your attitude and see if you would stand the test, whether you are obedient and altogether agreeable [to following my orders] in everything.

## **172 Corinthians 7:11**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

For behold what earnestness this very thing, this godly sorrow, has produced in you: what vindication of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what longing, what zeal, what avenging of wrong! In everything you demonstrated yourselves to be innocent in the matter.

### *God's Word Translation*

When you became distressed in a godly way, look at how much devotion it caused you to have. You were ready to clear yourselves of the charges against you. You were disgusted with the wrong that had been done. You were afraid. You wanted to see us. You wanted to show your concern for us. You were ready to punish the wrong that had been done. In every way you have demonstrated that you are people who are innocent in this matter.

### *King James Bible*

For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

### *Bible in Basic English*

For you see what care was produced in you by this very sorrow of yours before God, what clearing of yourselves, what wrath against sin, what fear, what desire, what serious purpose, what punishment. In everything you have made it clear that you are free from sin in this business.

### *Douay-Rheims Bible*

For behold this selfsame thing, that you were made sorrowful according to God, how great carefulness it worketh in you; yea defence, yea indignation, yea fear, yea desire, yea zeal, yea revenge: in all things you have shewed yourselves to be undefiled in the matter.

## **18New International Version**

---

### *1 Corinthians 3:1*

Brothers, I could not address you as spiritual but as worldly—mere infants in Christ.

### *1 Corinthians 11:17-20*

In the following directives I have no praise for you, for your meetings do more harm than good. In the first place, I hear that when you come together as a church, there are divisions among you, and to some extent I believe it. No doubt there have to be differences among you to show which of you have God's approval. When you come together, it is not the Lord's Supper you eat.

**192 Corinthians 7:11**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For behold what earnestness this very thing, this godly sorrow, has produced in you: what vindication of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what longing, what zeal, what avenging of wrong! In everything you demonstrated yourselves to be innocent in the matter.

*God's Word Translation*

When you became distressed in a godly way, look at how much devotion it caused you to have. You were ready to clear yourselves of the charges against you. You were disgusted with the wrong that had been done. You were afraid. You wanted to see us. You wanted to show your concern for us. You were ready to punish the wrong that had been done. In every way you have demonstrated that you are people who are innocent in this matter.

*King James Bible*

For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

*Bible in Basic English*

For you see what care was produced in you by this very sorrow of yours before God, what clearing of yourselves, what wrath against sin, what fear, what desire, what serious purpose, what punishment. In everything you have made it clear that you are free from sin in this business.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

For behold this selfsame thing, that you were made sorrowful according to God, how great carefulness it worketh in you; yea defence, yea indignation, yea fear, yea desire, yea zeal, yea revenge: in all things you have shewed yourselves to be undefiled in the matter.

**202 Thessalonians 2:10**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

and with all the deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved.

*God's Word Translation*

He will use everything that God disapproves of to deceive those who are dying, those who refused to love the truth that would save them.

*King James Bible*

And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

*Bible in Basic English*

And with every deceit of wrongdoing among those whose fate is destruction; because they were quite without that love of the true faith by which they might have salvation.

*Darby Bible Translation*

and in all deceit of unrighteousness to them that perish, because they have not received the love of the truth that they might be saved.

**<sup>21</sup>Colossians 1:27**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

to whom God willed to make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

*God's Word Translation*

God wanted his people throughout the world to know the glorious riches of this mystery—which is Christ living in you, giving you the hope of glory.

*King James Bible*

To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

*Bible in Basic English*

To whom God was pleased to give knowledge of the wealth of the glory of this secret among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

*Darby Bible Translation*

to whom God would make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the nations, which is Christ in you the hope of glory:

**<sup>22</sup>1 John 2:3-6**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>3</sup>Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. <sup>4</sup>He who says, "I know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. <sup>5</sup>But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. <sup>6</sup>He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.

**<sup>23</sup>1 Corinthians 6:11**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Such were some of you; but you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Spirit of our God.

*God's Word Translation*

That's what some of you were! But you have been washed and made holy, and you have received God's approval in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Spirit of our God.

*King James Bible*

And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

*Bible in Basic English*

And such were some of you; but you have been washed, you have been made holy, you have been given righteousness in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Spirit of our God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And these things were some of you; but ye have been washed, but ye have been sanctified, but ye have been justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

**24** **1 Corinthians 3:1**

*New American Standard Bible*

And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual men, but as to men of flesh, as to infants in Christ.

*God's Word Translation*

Brothers and sisters, I couldn't talk to you as spiritual people but as people still influenced by your corrupt nature. You were infants in your faith in Christ.

*King James Bible*

And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

*Bible in Basic English*

And the teaching I gave you, my brothers, was such as I was able to give, not to those who have the Spirit, but to those who are still in the flesh, even to children in Christ.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And I, brethren, have not been able to speak to you as to spiritual, but as to fleshly; as to babes in Christ.

**25** **1 Corinthians 11:17**

*New American Standard Bible*

But in giving this instruction, I do not praise you, because you come together not for the better but for the worse.

*God's Word Translation*

I have no praise for you as I instruct you in the following matter: When you gather, it results in more harm than good.

*King James Bible*

Now in this that I declare unto you I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.

*Bible in Basic English*

But in giving you this order, there is one thing about which I am not pleased: it is that when you come together it is not for the better but for the worse.

*Darby Bible Translation*

But in prescribing to you on this which I now enter on, I do not praise, namely, that ye come together, not for the better, but for the worse.

**26** **Ephesians 4:11**

*New American Standard Bible*

And He gave some as apostles, and some as prophets, and some as evangelists, and some as pastors and teachers,

*God's Word Translation*

He also gave apostles, prophets, missionaries, as well as pastors and teachers as gifts to his church.

*King James Bible*

And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

*Bible in Basic English*

And he gave some as Apostles, and some, prophets; and some, preachers of the good news; and some to give care and teaching;

*Darby Bible Translation*

and he has given some apostles, and some prophets, and some evangelists, and some shepherds and teachers,

**27** **1 Corinthians 12:21**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; or again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you."

*God's Word Translation*

An eye can't say to a hand, "I don't need you!" Or again, the head can't say to the feet, "I don't need you!"

*King James Bible*

And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

*Bible in Basic English*

And the eye may not say to the hand, I have no need of you: or again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

The eye cannot say to the hand, I have not need of thee; or again, the head to the feet, I have not need of you.

**28** **New International Version**

---

*Romans 12:10*

Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Honor one another above yourselves.

*1 John 3:11*

This is the message you heard from the beginning: We should love one another.

*John 13:34*

"A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.

*Malachi 2:10*

Have we not all one Father? Did not one God create us? Why do we profane the covenant of our fathers by breaking faith with one another?

*2 John 1:5*

And now, dear lady, I am not writing you a new command but one we have had from the beginning. I ask that we love one another.

*2 Corinthians 13:12*

Greet one another with a holy kiss.

*Ephesians 5:21*

Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

*1 Peter 4:9*

Offer hospitality to one another without grumbling.

## Chapter 8

### *Ephesians 4:2*

Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.

### *1 Thessalonians 5:11*

Therefore encourage one another and build each other up, just as in fact you are doing.

### *Ephesians 4:32*

Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

### *1 Peter 5:14*

Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to all of you who are in Christ.

### *Romans 15:7*

Accept one another, then, just as Christ accepted you, in order to bring praise to God.

### *Hebrews 10:24*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.

### *Zechariah 7:9*

“This is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘Administer true justice; show mercy and compassion to one another.’

### *1 Corinthians 5:12*

What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside?

### *1 Peter 3:8*

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; be sympathetic, love as brothers, be compassionate and humble.

### *Hebrews 3:13*

But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness.

### *Hebrews 10:24-25*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds. <sup>25</sup>Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another—and all the more as you see the Day approaching.

## **<sup>29</sup>1 Corinthians 12:21**

### *New American Standard Bible*

And the eye cannot say to the hand, “I have no need of you”; or again the head to the feet, “I have no need of you.”

### *God’s Word Translation*

An eye can’t say to a hand, “I don’t need you!” Or again, the head can’t say to the feet, “I don’t need you!”

### *King James Bible*

And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

### *Bible in Basic English*

And the eye may not say to the hand, I have no need of you: or again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

The eye cannot say to the hand, I have not need of thee; or again, the head to the feet, I have not need of you.

**<sup>30</sup>Hebrews 3:13**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is still called "Today," so that none of you will be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

*God's Word Translation*

Encourage each other every day while you have the opportunity. If you do this, none of you will be deceived by sin and become stubborn.

*King James Bible*

But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

*Bible in Basic English*

But give comfort to one another every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin:

*Darby Bible Translation*

But encourage yourselves each day, as long as it is called To-day, that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

**<sup>31</sup>Acts 2:44**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

And all those who had believed were together and had all things in common;

*God's Word Translation*

All the believers kept meeting together, and they shared everything with each other.

*King James Bible*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

*Bible in Basic English*

And all those who were of the faith kept together, and had all things in common;

*Darby Bible Translation*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common,

**<sup>32</sup>Ephesians 4:16**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

from whom the whole body, being fitted and held together by what every joint supplies, according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth of the body for the building up of itself in love.

*God's Word Translation*

He makes the whole body fit together and unites it through the support of every joint. As each and every part does its job, he makes the body grow so that it builds itself up in love.

*King James Bible*

From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

*Bible in Basic English*

Through whom all the body, being rightly formed and united together, by the full working of every part, is increased to the building up of itself in love.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

From whom the whole body, being compacted and fitly joined together, by what every joint supplieth, according to the operation in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of itself in charity.

**<sup>33</sup>Philippians 1:28**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

in no way alarmed by your opponents— which is a sign of destruction for them, but of salvation for you, and that too, from God.

*God's Word Translation*

So don't let your opponents intimidate you in any way. This is God's way of showing them that they will be destroyed and that you will be saved.

*King James Bible*

And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

*Bible in Basic English*

Having no fear of those who are against you; which is a clear sign of their destruction, but of your salvation, and that from God;

*Darby Bible Translation*

and not frightened in anything by the opposers, which is to them a demonstration of destruction, but of your salvation, and that from God;

**<sup>34</sup>Philippians 2:2**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

make my joy complete by being of the same mind, maintaining the same love, united in spirit, intent on one purpose.

*God's Word Translation*

Then fill me with joy by having the same attitude and the same love, living in harmony, and keeping one purpose in mind.

*King James Bible*

Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

*Bible in Basic English*

Make my joy complete by being of the same mind, having the same love, being in harmony and of one mind;

*Darby Bible Translation*

fulfil my joy, that ye may think the same thing, having the same love, joined in soul, thinking one thing;

**35 Galatians 4:19**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

My children, with whom I am again in labor until Christ is formed in you—

*God's Word Translation*

My children, I am suffering birth pains for you again until Christ is formed in you.

*King James Bible*

My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you,

*American Standard Version*

My little children, of whom I am again in travail until Christ be formed in you—

*Bible in Basic English*

My children, of whom I am again in birth-pains till Christ is formed in you,

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

My little children, of whom I am in labour again, until Christ be formed in you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

my children, of whom I again travail in birth until Christ shall have been formed in you:

---

**36 1 Thessalonians 2:7**

*New American Standard Bible*

But we proved to be gentle among you, as a nursing mother tenderly cares for her own children.

*God's Word Translation*

although as apostles of Christ we had the right to do this. Instead, we were gentle when we were with you, like a mother taking care of her children.

*King James Bible*

But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

*Bible in Basic English*

But we were gentle among you, like a woman caring for her little ones:

*Darby Bible Translation*

but have been gentle in the midst of you, as a nurse would cherish her own children.

---

**37 1 Thessalonians 3:12**

*New American Standard Bible*

and may the Lord cause you to increase and abound in love for one another, and for all people, just as we also do for you;

*God's Word Translation*

We also pray that the Lord will greatly increase your love for each other and for everyone else, just as we love you.

*King James Bible*

And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you:

*Bible in Basic English*

And the Lord give you increase of love in fullest measure to one another and to all men, even as our love to you;

*Darby Bible Translation*

But you, may the Lord make to exceed and abound in love toward one another, and toward all, even as we also towards you,

**<sup>38</sup>Matthew 16:18**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

“I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades will not overpower it.

*God’s Word Translation*

You are Peter, and I can guarantee that on this rock I will build my church. And the gates of hell will not overpower it.

*King James Bible*

And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

*Bible in Basic English*

And I say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock will my church be based, and the doors of hell will not overcome it.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And I also, I say unto thee that thou art Peter, and on this rock I will build my assembly, and hades’ gates shall not prevail against it.

**<sup>39</sup>Ephesians 3:10**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

*God’s Word Translation*

He did this so that now, through the church, he could let the rulers and authorities in heaven know his infinite wisdom.

*King James Bible*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

*Bible in Basic English*

So that now to the rulers and the authorities in the heavens might be made clear through the church the wide-shining wisdom of God,

*Darby Bible Translation*

in order that now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenlies might be made known through the assembly the all-various wisdom of God,

**<sup>40</sup>1 Timothy 3:15**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

but in case I am delayed, I write so that you will know how one ought to conduct himself in the household of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and support of the truth.

*God's Word Translation*

in case I'm delayed. I want you to know how people who are members of God's family must live. God's family is the church of the living God, the pillar and foundation of the truth.

*King James Bible*

But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

*Bible in Basic English*

But if I am long in coming, this will make clear to you what behaviour is right for men in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and base of what is true.

*Darby Bible Translation*

but if I delay, in order that thou mayest know how one ought to conduct oneself in God's house, which is the assembly of the living God, the pillar and base of the truth.

## Chapter 9



# He Ordained Pruning to Make His Garden Healthy and Beautiful!

**D**oesn't it seem “violent” or “mean” to take a sharp object and “prune” a bush or tree, or a flowering plant? God built into nature itself the “imagery” of life and truths He meant us to understand one day about His Kingdom. There is nothing whatsoever in nature, physics, mathematics, music, astronomy, biology, history, quantum mechanics, or anything on this planet that was not meant to be a “visual aid” for<sup>1</sup> His People.

All of His Creation is full of “shadows” of Spiritual Truth, waiting to be understood and embraced. As was already mentioned, one obvious foreshadowing of “the reality that is in Christ” is biological family, which points towards understanding of the Second-Birth<sup>2</sup> Family<sup>3</sup>, which is of course a topic extremely pertinent to any Biblical discussion about what “Father” intends His Church to be. But, of course, there are innumerable other<sup>4</sup> “shadows” Father has placed in His creation for us to discover as “visual aids,” as well.

Jesus spent much of His time here pointing to the various “shadows” that His Abba had placed here to help us understand HIS Kingdom. We call them “Parables.” Jesus drew attention to birds, fields, seed, and trees—as they related to our hearts and His Kingdom. He compared the nature of growth in His Kingdom to the chemistry of shrinking cloth, and to the fermentation of fruit and the resulting carbon dioxide release. His heart and mind are *past finding out*<sup>5</sup>—and that’s a good thing.

And now then, there’s that “pruning”<sup>6</sup> thing that Father, the Husbandman<sup>7</sup>, built into life—to teach us of HIS Life with His Son, and all of us together.

“Pruning in landscaping and gardening is the practice of removing diseased, or non-productive portions from a plant. The purpose of pruning is to shape the plant by directing plant growth, to maintain the health of the plant, or to increase the yield or quality of flowers and fruits. Proper pruning is as much a skill as it is an art, since badly pruned plants can become diseased or grow in undesirable ways.”<sup>6</sup>

We know beyond any question that God has Commanded us to “disKoinonia” folks from the church, in various situations where a person is diseased with a corruption of the Life of His Son. Of course, that only applies to those “churches” where there is daily (the only kind of) Koinonia happening as Jesus’ very own Life is lived out. But knowing that, certain very good questions should arise.

What form should “disFellowship” take, and how might it come about? And what would be possible “reasons” the Husbandman, the Gardener, the Father might Command that some “*pruning*”<sup>8</sup> take place within the branches of the Vine? What are some types of corruption to Life that “*crucify afresh*”<sup>2</sup> the Lamb of God, and therefore must be pruned if there is a refusal to be Changed by the Holy Spirit and Truth? What are some “sins” the Scriptures teach as fatal if there is no repentance?

Truly, the composite of “lists” in the Scriptures of “reasons” an unrepentant man would be cut off from Jesus, and thus His Body, is exhaustive, to say the least. If one were to combine a list from Galatians 5, Revelation 21, Romans 1, 2Tim.3, 1Cor.5, and other such Scriptures, that list would be prodigious. Here is a partial list of what sins the Bible says will result, without repentance, in separation from the Head and Body. There will be “*no Inheritance in the Kingdom of God*” and these will be “*in the lake of Fire*” where there is “*weeping and gnashing of teeth.*” These can, without repentance “*have no part or share*” in the Body of Christ.

*“Without Holiness, no one will see the Lord.”*

*“Everyone who names the name of the Lord must turn from wickedness.”*

*“If you love Me, you will obey Me.”*

*“A curse be on everyone who doesn’t love the Lord.”*

*“MANY will say to Me on that day, ‘Lord, Lord’... but I said, ‘Depart from Me, I never Knew you.’”*

*“And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure. Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him. Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God. In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother. For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should live agape love for one another, not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil, and his brother’s were righteous. Do not marvel, my brothers, if the world hates you. We know that we have passed from death to life, because we live agape love with the brothers. He who does not agape love his brother—makes his home in death.”*

Here is a partial list of those who cannot be allowed to stay in the Church if they refuse to renounce sin and open their hearts to Jesus, calling on His Name and repenting. Without a desire to turn from these sins, with open hearts and hand, these are sins that must be “pruned” as a Redemptive Tool: “idolaters” (those giving affection or decision-swying priority to relationships and objects and desires and dreams of this world, thus God-replacement, idolatry), “haters,” “those disobedient to parents,” “the immoral” (the Greek word is “ pornos”<sup>10</sup>), “drunks,” “all liars,” “the materialistic,” “the covetous,” “the greedy,” “fornicators,” “gossips,” and “the loveless,” “the lukewarm,” “lovers of the world,” “those who rail and revile,” “the angry,” “the jealous,” “the sensual,” “those who create strife,” “the

conceited,” “the divisive,” “the unbelieving,” “those without self-control,” “homosexuals,” “the cowardly,” “murderers,” “those with foul mouths,” and....

The Biblical list goes on, of demonstrations of separation from the Head—and necessarily<sup>11</sup> then, by definition, separation from His Body.

Of course, none of these sins, including murder or any others, are “reason” to dis-Koinonia any person, if there is repentance and humility and honesty<sup>12</sup>. But any of these and more, without repentance, would mandate that the Body respond to the Head, with obedience in love, and *demonstrate* the “broken relationship” with the Head, which they have chosen. Any Body that does not reflect the feelings of the Head is either very sick, or dying. The desired “end result” would always be redemption and reconciliation, out of hope of Repentance<sup>13</sup>.

---

## Chapter 9 Footnotes

### <sup>1</sup>Ephesians 1:22-23

---

#### *Amplified Bible*

<sup>22</sup>And He has put all things under His feet and has appointed Him the universal and supreme Head of the church [a headship exercised throughout the church] <sup>23</sup>Which is His body, the fullness of Him Who fills all in all [for in that body lives the full measure of Him Who makes everything complete, and Who fills everything everywhere with Himself].

### <sup>2</sup>John 3:3-12

---

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>3</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.”

<sup>4</sup>Nicodemus said to Him, “How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother’s womb and be born?”

<sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup>That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. <sup>7</sup>Do not marvel that I said to you, ‘You must be born again.’ <sup>8</sup>The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit.”

<sup>9</sup>Nicodemus answered and said to Him, “How can these things be?”

<sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, “Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things? <sup>11</sup>Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. <sup>12</sup>If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things?

---

*New King James Version*

Then His brothers and His mother came, and standing outside they sent to Him, calling Him. <sup>32</sup>And a multitude was sitting around Him; and they said to Him, "Look, Your mother and Your brothers are outside seeking You."

But He answered them, saying, "Who is My mother, or My brothers?" <sup>34</sup>And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, "Here are My mother and My brothers!"

---

**4 Tasting the Powers of the Coming Age**

[www.GodThots.com/Powers](http://www.GodThots.com/Powers)

---

**51 Corinthians 2:6-16**

*New King James Version*

<sup>6</sup>However, we speak wisdom among those who are mature, yet not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. <sup>7</sup>But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages for our glory, <sup>8</sup>which none of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

<sup>9</sup>But as it is written:

"Eye has not seen, nor ear heard,  
Nor have entered into the heart of man  
The things which God has prepared for those who love Him."

<sup>10</sup>But God has revealed them to us through His Spirit. For the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of God. <sup>11</sup>For what man knows the things of a man except the spirit of the man which is in him? Even so no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God. <sup>12</sup>Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God.

<sup>13</sup>These things we also speak, not in words which man's wisdom teaches but which the Holy Spirit teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. <sup>14</sup>But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. <sup>15</sup>But he who is spiritual judges all things, yet he himself is rightly judged by no one. <sup>16</sup>For "who has known the mind of the LORD that he may instruct Him?" But we have the mind of Christ.

---

**6 Wikipedia Entry for Pruning**

"Pruning in landscaping and gardening is the practice of removing diseased, non-productive, or otherwise unwanted portions from a plant. The purpose of pruning is to shape the plant by controlling or directing plant growth, to maintain the health of the plant, or to increase the yield or quality of flowers and fruits. Proper pruning is as much a skill as it is an art, since badly pruned plants can become diseased or grow in undesirable ways. Proponents of pruning, both gardeners and orchardists, often argue that it improves the health of the plant and makes sturdier structure, often referred to as the scaffold; opponents believe that pruning harms plants' "natural" forms. From the least to the most severe forms of pruning: Pinching, Dead Heading, Shearing, Cutting-back, Thinning, and Topping."

[en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pruning](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pruning)

**<sup>7</sup>John 15:1-19**

*American Standard Version*

---

<sup>1</sup>I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

<sup>2</sup>Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it may bear more fruit.

<sup>3</sup>Already ye are clean because of the word which I have spoken unto you.

<sup>4</sup>Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so neither can ye, except ye abide in me.

<sup>5</sup>I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing.

<sup>6</sup>If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

<sup>7</sup>If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

<sup>8</sup>Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; and so shall ye be my disciples.

<sup>9</sup>Even as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved you: abide ye in my love.

<sup>10</sup>If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

<sup>11</sup>These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be made full.

<sup>12</sup>This is my commandment, that ye love one another, even as I have loved you.

<sup>13</sup>Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

<sup>14</sup>Ye are my friends, if ye do the things which I command you.

<sup>15</sup>No longer do I call you servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I heard from my Father, I have made known unto you.

<sup>16</sup>Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should abide: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

<sup>17</sup>These things I command you, that ye may love one another.

<sup>18</sup>If the world hateth you, ye know that it hath hated me before it hated you.

<sup>19</sup>If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

**<sup>8</sup>John 15:2**

*New American Standard Bible*

---

"Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit, He takes away; and every branch that bears fruit, He prunes it so that it may bear more fruit.

*God's Word Translation*

He removes every one of my branches that doesn't produce fruit. He also prunes every branch that does produce fruit to make it produce more fruit.

*King James Bible*

Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

*Bible in Basic English*

He takes away every branch in me which has no fruit, and every branch which has fruit he makes clean, so that it may have more fruit.

*Darby Bible Translation*

As to every branch in me not bearing fruit, he takes it away; and as to every one bearing fruit, he purges it that it may bring forth more fruit.

**<sup>9</sup>Hebrews 6:4-6**

---

*American Standard Version*

<sup>4</sup>For as touching those who were once enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit,

<sup>5</sup>and tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the age to come,

<sup>6</sup>and then fell away, it is impossible to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

**<sup>10</sup>1 Corinthians 5 Greek Text**

---

[www.GodThots.com/1Cor5Greek](http://www.GodThots.com/1Cor5Greek)

**<sup>11</sup>Joshua 7:10-24**

---

*New International Version*

<sup>10</sup>The LORD said to Joshua, "Stand up! What are you doing down on your face? <sup>11</sup>Israel has sinned; they have violated my covenant, which I commanded them to keep. They have taken some of the devoted things; they have stolen, they have lied, they have put them with their own possessions. <sup>12</sup>That is why the Israelites cannot stand against their enemies; they turn their backs and run because they have been made liable to destruction. I will not be with you anymore unless you destroy whatever among you is devoted to destruction.

<sup>13</sup>"Go, consecrate the people. Tell them, 'Consecrate yourselves in preparation for tomorrow; for this is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: That which is devoted is among you, O Israel. You cannot stand against your enemies until you remove it.

<sup>14</sup>" 'In the morning, present yourselves tribe by tribe. The tribe that the LORD takes shall come forward clan by clan; the clan that the LORD takes shall come forward family by family; and the family that the LORD takes shall come forward man by man. <sup>15</sup>He who is caught with the devoted things shall be destroyed by fire, along with all that belongs to him. He has violated the covenant of the LORD and has done a disgraceful thing in Israel!' "

<sup>16</sup>Early the next morning Joshua had Israel come forward by tribes, and Judah was taken.

<sup>17</sup>The clans of Judah came forward, and he took the Zerahites. He had the clan of the Zerahites come forward by families, and Zimri was taken. <sup>18</sup>Joshua had his family come

forward man by man, and Achan son of Carmi, the son of Zimri, the son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, was taken.

<sup>19</sup>Then Joshua said to Achan, “My son, give glory to the LORD, the God of Israel, and give him the praise. Tell me what you have done; do not hide it from me.”

<sup>20</sup> Achan replied, “It is true! I have sinned against the LORD, the God of Israel. This is what I have done: <sup>21</sup>When I saw in the plunder a beautiful robe from Babylonia, two hundred shekels of silver and a wedge of gold weighing fifty shekels, I coveted them and took them. They are hidden in the ground inside my tent, with the silver underneath.”

<sup>22</sup>So Joshua sent messengers, and they ran to the tent, and there it was, hidden in his tent, with the silver underneath. <sup>23</sup>They took the things from the tent, brought them to Joshua and all the Israelites and spread them out before the LORD.

<sup>24</sup>Then Joshua, together with all Israel, took Achan son of Zerah, the silver, the robe, the gold wedge, his sons and daughters, his cattle, donkeys and sheep, his tent and all that he had, to the Valley of Achor.

## <sup>12</sup>John 3:20

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

“For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed.

### *God’s Word Translation*

People who do what is wrong hate the light and don’t come to the light. They don’t want their actions to be exposed.

### *King James Bible*

For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

### *Bible in Basic English*

The light is hated by everyone whose acts are evil and he does not come to the light for fear that his acts will be seen.

### *Darby Bible Translation*

For every one that does evil hates the light, and does not come to the light that his works may not be shewn as they are;

## <sup>13</sup>2 Corinthians 7:8-11

---

### *New King James Version*

<sup>8</sup>For even if I made you sorry with my letter, I do not regret it; though I did regret it. For I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though only for a while. <sup>9</sup>Now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that your sorrow led to repentance. For you were made sorry in a godly manner, that you might suffer loss from us in nothing.

<sup>10</sup>For godly sorrow produces repentance leading to salvation, not to be regretted; but the sorrow of the world produces death. <sup>11</sup>For observe this very thing, that you sorrowed in a godly manner: What diligence it produced in you, what clearing of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what vehement desire, what zeal, what vindication! In all things you proved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

## Chapter 10



# Pruning, *DisKoinonia*— How is it Implemented, Biblically?

**T**hat the Body reflect the feelings and responses of the Head is both reasonable and Biblically mandated. Another question entirely is “how it will look” when that pruning takes place, practically speaking. What ought to happen when a person remains stubbornly or continually separated from the Head? As anyone who knows God might suspect, there is no “magic formula” or singular “recipe” or “how to” specified in God’s Heart or Word. That would be VERY unlike Him, now wouldn’t it?

Of course we know that Jesus spoke of this matter in Matthew, chapter 18<sup>1</sup>, and He was clear in Principle as to how to approach the problem, both on our part and His. It would be improper to turn these Words into a legal roadmap, of course. Jesus was also clear in *Principle* of how to pray.<sup>2</sup> But, no one who knows God would turn Jesus’ teaching into a recipe of “what to chant.” That is not what He was Teaching us to do—repeat anything

by rote. He did nothing by rote, and never taught a soul to do anything by rote. Chanting specific words to God would be as weird and lifeless as someone “chanting repetitively” to any *other* living person they know. If you know anyone intimately, and love them from the heart, you will not repeat words to them, again and again. That would be death, and absurd. Rote and external formulae are for other empty, lifeless religions, such as Buddhism, Hinduism, and Islam. But “not so” with our Abba.

The *Principles* in Matthew 18 are worked out by the Holy Spirit in many different ways in the New Testament Record. In the century that the New Testament was recorded, those who knew Jesus personally and in the Spirit did not follow a recipe of any kind. In fact, there is not *one* single instance in the entire sixty years of the New Testament Record, the Bible, that Matthew 18 is known to have been “followed verbatim.” Naturally, one would think that it may have happened, at times, though unRecorded. But never *one* time that disKoinonia is actually recorded or taught did any of the Apostles or New Testament writers actually prescribe or practice any precise procedure that encompasses definitively a “methodology” of any kind “just like in Matthew 18.”

Of course, the *PRINCIPLES* of Matthew 18 seem to be present in every known case in the Bible. But, nothing precisely like the “procedure” of Matthew 18 seems to have occurred. Just as with “the Lord’s Prayer,” it is not to be rote or recipe, but a bowed head and heart, touching the personal Reality of the moment, as the Spirit determines. The Bible doesn’t support “every time things are supposed to happen this way or that.”

Though no instances of disKoinonia, disFellowship, are identical to Matthew 18, some situations bear similarities and overlap. Other events, such as 1Cor.5, Titus 3:10, Acts 5, and more, bear little resemblance in “procedure.” These and other situations, in fact, cannot be identical to any “recipe” for disKoinonia. Every circumstance was different, it would seem, if the Bible is really our guide to understanding this topic, as most would surely desire.

Principles in Jesus’ teaching and that of the apostles include protecting our brother or sister’s dignity as much as possible, never gossiping, involving others with the Christlikeness and gifts to be helpful at the appropriate time for equipping and testimony, and Jesus’ Presence as essential for anything meaningful to transpire, for better or worse. And, of course, without repentance, there must be a response by the Body

of Christ to “not eat with them,” “not associate with them,” and “expel them from your midst.” They must no longer be treated as a partner or comrade or friend with social banter, meals, or times of companionship, sport, or recreation.

Now, GOD says, instead of treating a disFellowshipped person as a brother or sister, we are to treat them as a pagan, a tax collector, a sinner. What does that mean? Well, frankly, it doesn’t mean much if we have always lived like the pagans live. If in a person’s life there has been no previous discernment or holiness in the workplace or neighborhood to distinguish those who are “Once-born” as being Biblically a *different “species”* than those who have been legitimately “Twice-born,” then how can we change? The Bible says there is a massive difference between “Once-born” and “Twice-born.” We even refer to a person’s anniversary of their entry on to the planet as their “First-birth Day” or their “Earth-Birth Day.” This “First-birth” represents only the biological birth, not yet the Miracle of the “Translation from the Kingdom of Darkness, to the Kingdom of the Beloved Son.” That Miracle is the “Second Birth.” The Birth that Jesus promised to those who totally relinquish their life to Him in Faith.

But, nevertheless, we do of course treat all pagans, the “Once-born,” with respect and generosity. *“Do good to all men, but especially the Household of Believers.”* With those who are unSaved as of yet, or disFellowshipped, there will be kindness and respect as we are able—but no Fellowship<sup>3</sup> or shared life or “friendship”<sup>4</sup> or “camaraderie” any longer.

Back to the topic of “How To.” It is with great joy that we concede that Jesus does not teach us a formula, but a Way. There are distinct differences from Matthew 18 in every single disKoinonia and “pruning” case recorded in the Bible. Read some of them, all of these and more, and you’ll see that every “step” of Matthew 18 is never found in even one single case. Mat.18:15-20<sup>5</sup>, 1Cor.5:4-13<sup>6</sup>, Titus 3:10<sup>7</sup>, 1Tim.5:19-20<sup>8</sup>, 1Tim.1:20<sup>9</sup>, Acts 5:3-11<sup>10</sup>, Gal.6:1<sup>11</sup>, 1Cor.2:14-16<sup>12</sup>, 2Thes.3:6, 14<sup>13</sup>, Romans 16:17<sup>14</sup>, Jude 1:23<sup>15</sup>, 2 John 8-11<sup>16</sup>, 1Cor.1:11<sup>17</sup>, etc. Apparently, the apostles didn’t believe Jesus was writing methodological “Law” about jot and tittle details in a “How To” manual of disFellowship. The apostles walking in Jesus’ Spirit did NOT teach or “do” anything in a textbook manner, any more than Jesus did when here physically. The Principles are Essential, but again and again in these Scriptures the church did something and taught something decidedly distinctive. Don’t pull out the cookbook and start dictating to God, when Jesus, the One “born of Wind,”<sup>18</sup> is at the Helm of His Body!

Dance His Dance if you, too, want to be part of Him and the Fullness of His Life.

As you can see in these, and other similar Scriptures and circumstances, every single time is different when Koinonia is removed from a follower of Jesus. Who goes to the person who has drifted from Jesus, how many times, in what context, who decides, for what cause, how quickly—it is all different in every single instance recorded in the new Testament. There is no “cookie cutter” method in the Bible. DisKoinonia is never *ignored* by God’s People in the Bible. Nor is there a “recipe” and connect-the-dots 1-2-3 game, though there are several guidelines and Principles to be obeyed. Paul, Peter, John, Jude, James, Luke and the others who Know Him... did and taught and declared something “different” in every single instance recorded in the New Testament.

But when breaking off Koinonia, Fellowship, the GOAL was always the same, and the Principles the same. Be redemptive when possible, have a heart and hope towards restoration, protect the dignity of those involved whenever possible, proceed with love, equipping, and clarity, and always without gossip. While that “protection” of the one in sin will result often in “everyone won’t know everything about everything”—that is actually a good thing. That care for their dignity actually provides the easiest and most painless path Back to Jesus and His Body should they repent as is hoped. These Principles are always inherent in all we do to serve Jesus and His Body, “*wrestling to present one another complete in Christ*”<sup>19</sup> while “*in the pains of childbirth until Christ is formed in them.*”<sup>20</sup> It is done, when it must be done, in order to help stubborn but genuine followers of Jesus to change, as well as to protect the rest of the Body of Jesus from the unwholesome life and unChristlike thoughts and “teaching”<sup>21</sup> of destructive charlatans<sup>22</sup> and rebels and liars<sup>23</sup>.

---

### *Chapter 10 Footnotes*

#### **<sup>1</sup>Matthew 18:15-20**

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>15</sup> If your brother sins, go and show him his fault in private; if he listens to you, you have won your brother.

<sup>16</sup> But if he does not listen to you, take one or two more with you, so that BY THE MOUTH OF TWO OR THREE WITNESSES EVERY FACT MAY BE CONFIRMED.

<sup>17</sup> If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, let him be to you as a Gentile and a tax collector.

## Chapter 10

<sup>18</sup>"Truly I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven.

<sup>19</sup>"Again I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about anything that they may ask, it shall be done for them by My Father who is in heaven.

<sup>20</sup>"For where two or three have gathered together in My name, I am there in their midst."

### **<sup>2</sup>Matthew 6:9-15**

---

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>9</sup>In this manner, therefore, pray:

Our Father in heaven,  
Hallowed be Your name.

<sup>10</sup>Your kingdom come.

Your will be done  
On earth as it is in heaven.

<sup>11</sup>Give us this day our daily bread.

<sup>12</sup>And forgive us our debts,  
As we forgive our debtors.

<sup>13</sup>And do not lead us into temptation,  
But deliver us from the evil one.

For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.

<sup>14</sup>"For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.

<sup>15</sup>"But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

### **<sup>3</sup>2 Corinthians 6:14**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

Do not be bound together with unbelievers; for what partnership have righteousness and lawlessness, or what fellowship has light with darkness?

#### *God's Word Translation*

Stop forming inappropriate relationships with unbelievers. Can right and wrong be partners? Can light have anything in common with darkness?

#### *King James Bible*

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

#### *Bible in Basic English*

Do not keep company with those who have not faith: for what is there in common between righteousness and evil, or between light and dark?

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

Be not diversely yoked with unbelievers; for what participation is there between righteousness and lawlessness? or what fellowship of light with darkness?

### **<sup>4</sup>James 4:4**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

You adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is hostility toward

God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

*God's Word Translation*

You unfaithful people! Don't you know that love for this evil world is hatred toward God? Whoever wants to be a friend of this world is an enemy of God.

*King James Bible*

Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

*Bible in Basic English*

O you who are false to God, do you not see that the friends of this world are not God's friends? Every man desiring to be a friend of this world makes himself a hater of God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Adulteresses, know ye not that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore is minded to be the friend of the world is constituted enemy of God.

**<sup>5</sup>Matthew 18:15-20**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>15</sup>"If your brother sins, go and show him his fault in private; if he listens to you, you have won your brother.

<sup>16</sup>"But if he does not listen to you, take one or two more with you, so that BY THE MOUTH OF TWO OR THREE WITNESSES EVERY FACT MAY BE CONFIRMED.

<sup>17</sup>"If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, let him be to you as a Gentile and a tax collector.

<sup>18</sup>"Truly I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven.

<sup>19</sup>"Again I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about anything that they may ask, it shall be done for them by My Father who is in heaven.

<sup>20</sup>"For where two or three have gathered together in My name, I am there in their midst."

**<sup>6</sup>1 Corinthians 5:4-13**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>4</sup>In the name of our Lord Jesus, when you are assembled, and I with you in spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus,

<sup>5</sup>I have decided to deliver such a one to Satan for the destruction of his flesh, so that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

<sup>6</sup>Your boasting is not good Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough?

<sup>7</sup>Clean out the old leaven so that you may be a new lump, just as you are in fact unleavened. For Christ our Passover also has been sacrificed.

<sup>8</sup>Therefore let us celebrate the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

<sup>9</sup>I wrote you in my letter not to associate with immoral people;

<sup>10</sup>I did not at all mean with the immoral people of this world, or with the covetous and swindlers, or with idolaters, for then you would have to go out of the world.

<sup>11</sup>But actually, I wrote to you not to associate with any so-called brother if he is an immoral person, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or a swindler—not even to eat with such a one.

<sup>12</sup>For what have I to do with judging outsiders? Do you not judge those who are within the church?

<sup>13</sup>But those who are outside, God judges. REMOVE THE WICKED MAN FROM AMONG YOURSELVES.

---

**<sup>7</sup>Titus 3:10**

*New American Standard Bible*

Reject a factious man after a first and second warning,

*God's Word Translation*

Have nothing to do with people who continue to teach false doctrine after you have warned them once or twice.

*King James Bible*

A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject;

*Bible in Basic English*

A man whose opinions are not those of the church, after a first and second protest, is to be kept out of your society;

*Darby Bible Translation*

An heretical man after a first and second admonition have done with,

---

**<sup>8</sup>1 Timothy 5:19-20**

*Amplified Bible*

Listen to no accusation [presented before a judge] against an elder unless it is confirmed by the testimony of two or three witnesses. As for those who are guilty and persist in sin, rebuke and admonish them in the presence of all, so that the rest may be warned and stand in wholesome awe and fear.

---

**<sup>9</sup>1 Timothy 1:20**

*New American Standard Bible*

Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have handed over to Satan, so that they will be taught not to blaspheme.

*God's Word Translation*

Among these people are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have handed over to Satan in order to teach them not to dishonor God.

*King James Bible*

Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

*Bible in Basic English*

Such are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have given up to Satan, so that they may say no more evil words against God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have delivered to Satan, that they may be taught by discipline not to blaspheme.

**<sup>10</sup>Acts 5:3-11**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>3</sup>But Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the price of the land for yourself? <sup>4</sup>While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God."

<sup>5</sup>Then Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and breathed his last. So great fear came upon all those who heard these things. <sup>6</sup>And the young men arose and wrapped him up, carried him out, and buried him.

<sup>7</sup>Now it was about three hours later when his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. <sup>8</sup>And Peter answered her, "Tell me whether you sold the land for so much?"

She said, "Yes, for so much."

<sup>9</sup>Then Peter said to her, "How is it that you have agreed together to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out." <sup>10</sup>Then immediately she fell down at his feet and breathed her last. And the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her out, buried her by her husband. <sup>11</sup>So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things.

**<sup>11</sup>Galatians 6:1**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Brethren, even if anyone is caught in any trespass, you who are spiritual, restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness; each one looking to yourself, so that you too will not be tempted.

*God's Word Translation*

Brothers and sisters, if a person gets trapped by wrongdoing, those of you who are spiritual should help that person turn away from doing wrong. Do it in a gentle way. At the same time watch yourself so that you also are not tempted.

*King James Bible*

Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

*Bible in Basic English*

Brothers, if a man is taken in any wrongdoing, you who are of the Spirit will put such a one right in a spirit of love; keeping watch on yourself, for fear that you yourself may be tested.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Brethren, if even a man be taken in some fault, ye who are spiritual restore such a one in a spirit of meekness, considering thyself lest thou also be tempted.

**12** **1 Corinthians 2:14-16**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>14</sup>But the natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; nor can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

<sup>15</sup>But he who is spiritual judges all things, yet he himself is rightly judged by no one.

<sup>16</sup>For “who has known the mind of the LORD that he may instruct Him?” But we have the mind of Christ.

**13** **New American Standard Bible**

---

*2 Thessalonians 3:6*

<sup>6</sup>Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you keep away from every brother who leads an unruly life and not according to the tradition which you received from us.

*2 Thessalonians 3:14*

<sup>14</sup>If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of that person and do not associate with him, so that he will be put to shame.

**14** **Romans 16:17**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Now I urge you, brethren, keep your eye on those who cause dissensions and hindrances contrary to the teaching which you learned, and turn away from them

**15** **Jude 1:23**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

save others, snatching them out of the fire; and on some have mercy with fear, hating even the garment polluted by the flesh.

*God's Word Translation*

Save others by snatching them from the fire of hell. Show mercy to others, even though you are afraid that you might be stained by their sinful lives.

*King James Bible*

And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

*Bible in Basic English*

And to some give salvation, pulling them out of the fire; and on some have mercy with fear, hating even the clothing which is made unclean by the flesh.

*Darby Bible Translation*

but others save with fear, snatching them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

**16** **2 John 1:8-11**

---

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>8</sup>Look to yourselves (take care) that you may not lose (throw away or destroy) all that we and you have labored for, but that you may [persevere until you] win and receive back a perfect reward [in full].

<sup>9</sup>Anyone who runs on ahead [of God] and does not abide in the doctrine of Christ [who is not content with what He taught] does not have God; but he who continues to live in the doctrine (teaching) of Christ [does have God], he has both the Father and the Son.

<sup>10</sup>If anyone comes to you and does not bring this doctrine [is disloyal to what Jesus Christ taught], do not receive him [do not accept him, do not welcome or admit him] into [your] house or bid him Godspeed or give him any encouragement.

<sup>11</sup>For he who wishes him success [who encourages him, wishing him Godspeed] is a partaker in his evil doings.

---

### <sup>17</sup>**1 Corinthians 1:11**

#### *Amplified Bible*

<sup>11</sup>For it has been made clear to me, my brethren, by those of Chloe's household, that there are contentions and wrangling and factions among you.

---

### <sup>18</sup>**John 3:8**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

"The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is everyone who is born of the Spirit."

#### *God's Word Translation*

The wind blows wherever it pleases. You hear its sound, but you don't know where the wind comes from or where it's going. That's the way it is with everyone born of the Spirit."

#### *King James Bible*

The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

The wind goes where its pleasure takes it, and the sound of it comes to your ears, but you are unable to say where it comes from and where it goes: so it is with everyone whose birth is from the Spirit.

---

### <sup>19</sup>**Colossians 1:28**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

We proclaim Him, admonishing every man and teaching every man with all wisdom, so that we may present every man complete in Christ.

#### *God's Word Translation*

We spread the message about Christ as we instruct and teach everyone with all the wisdom there is. We want to present everyone as mature Christian people.

#### *King James Bible*

Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:

#### *Bible in Basic English*

Whom we are preaching; guiding and teaching every man in all wisdom, so that every man may be complete in Christ;

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

whom we announce, admonishing every man, and teaching every man, in all wisdom, to the end that we may present every man perfect in Christ.

**<sup>20</sup>Galatians 4:19**

*New American Standard Bible*

My children, with whom I am again in labor until Christ is formed in you—

*God's Word Translation*

My children, I am suffering birth pains for you again until Christ is formed in you.

*King James Bible*

My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you,

*Bible in Basic English*

My children, of whom I am again in birth-pains till Christ is formed in you,

*Darby Bible Translation*

my children, of whom I again travail in birth until Christ shall have been formed in you:

**<sup>21</sup>Timothy 1:7**

*New American Standard Bible*

wanting to be teachers of the Law, even though they do not understand either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions.

**<sup>22</sup>Jude 1:10-19**

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>10</sup>But these men revile (scoff and sneer at) anything they do not happen to be acquainted with and do not understand; and whatever they do understand physically [that which they know by mere instinct], like irrational beasts—by these they corrupt themselves and are destroyed (perish).

<sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have run riotously in the way of Cain, and have abandoned themselves for the sake of gain [it offers them, following] the error of Balaam, and have perished in rebellion [like that] of Korah!

<sup>12</sup>These are hidden reefs (elements of danger) in your love feasts, where they boldly feast sumptuously [carousing together in your midst], without scruples providing for themselves [alone]. They are clouds without water, swept along by the winds; trees, without fruit at the late autumn gathering time—twice (doubly) dead, [lifeless and] plucked up by the roots;

<sup>13</sup>Wild waves of the sea, flinging up the foam of their own shame and disgrace; wandering stars, for whom the gloom of eternal darkness has been reserved forever.

<sup>14</sup>It was of these people, moreover, that Enoch in the seventh [generation] from Adam prophesied when he said, Behold, the Lord comes with His myriads of holy ones (ten thousands of His saints)

<sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all and to convict all the impious (unholy ones) of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed [in such an] ungodly [way], and of all the severe (abusive, jarring) things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.

<sup>16</sup>These are inveterate murmurers (grumblers) who complain [of their lot in life], going after their own desires [controlled by their passions]; their talk is boastful and arrogant, [and they claim to] admire men's persons and pay people flattering compliments to gain advantage.

A REVOLUTION WITHOUT DANCING IS A REVOLUTION NOT WORTH HAVING!

<sup>17</sup>But you must remember, beloved, the predictions which were made by the apostles (the special messengers) of our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).

<sup>18</sup>They told you beforehand, In the last days (in the end time) there will be scoffers [who seek to gratify their own unholy desires], following after their own ungodly passions.

<sup>19</sup>It is these who are [agitators] setting up distinctions and causing divisions—merely sensual [creatures, carnal, worldly-minded people], devoid of the [Holy] Spirit and destitute of any higher spiritual life.

<sup>23</sup>**Corinthians 11:13**

---

*Amplified Bible*

For such men are false apostles [spurious, counterfeits], deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles (special messengers) of Christ (the Messiah).

## Chapter 11



# Twisted Tale of Wheat and Tares

**T**ime for some straight talk about something that we could allow to sabotage our Walk with Father in these matters. But, surely no one would want<sup>1</sup> to be shipwrecked, so we want to know what pleases Father. We don't want anything but Jesus and His Truth, right? So, here goes. A common destructive error, often taught by those who are more interested in money and power than in pleasing Y'shua, is to teach something quite insidious. Some attempt to pass off a delusional version of "the parable of the wheat and tares."<sup>2</sup> Some use this Parable to try to teach that leaven in the church is totally allowable, and not worth obeying the Commands to "remove the leaven."<sup>3</sup> They say, "Let GOD do it—you can ignore the Commands from Jesus and the Apostles, because after all, Jesus said that weeds will grow up alongside the wheat, and there's nothing you should do about it."

Though you will see how unBiblical and destructive this path is, it is more common than you could ever imagine. The Laodicean "Pastors" say, "Don't you remember how Jesus said to LET the weeds grow up in the church? Remember He said, 'the field is the church,' right?" That is actually a very cunning and catastrophic lie by "the builders"<sup>4</sup>—calculated to justify leaven and disobedience (in spite of numerous clear Scriptures) for the purpose of power, comfort, popularity, and financial security. If you look

it up, what Jesus actually said is *“the field is the WORLD.”*<sup>5</sup> He does not say, “the field, where all the weeds and wheat grow together, is the church.” Wow, is that wrong and destructive teaching.

Understanding what Jesus *really* said will make all the difference in whether we decide to blend in with the lukewarmness that Jesus “vomits”<sup>6</sup>—or move ahead and explore His beauty and love and glory in the church, as *“the Bride makes herself ready.”* If you desire God’s Presence and Power, it is not possible to ignore or overlook these Holy matters. Ask Ananias and Sapphira, and Peter, if we can just overlook sin and brush it under the rug in the church. God doesn’t think so. It matters. So, one more time. Those who desire to please men and so cease to be God’s servants (Gal.1:10<sup>7</sup>) say, “Let the wheat and tares grow together in the CHURCH, and Gawd will take care of it all.” Jesus instead Commands that we *“get the leaven OUT of the batch”* (the Church).

So, what *is* the Parable of the wheat and the tares all about? It’s not complicated. Jesus Calls us to aggressively be *“in the world but not of it.”* We cannot, and *should* not TRY to separate ourselves from the other inhabitants of planet earth by attempting to build a utopian country or city, or retreat to a “christian community” to hide-away from unBelievers. We cannot do so. We are to be *“the Light of the world”* and *“shine like stars in the universe,”* as a *“City set on a hill”* that cannot be *“hidden under a bushel basket,”* that *“they may see our good deeds”* and *“see how we love one another.”* Now how are we going to do all of THAT, if we are playing hide-and-seek, and trying to “start something” in a gimmicky fake-utopian hideaway? The *“salt of the earth”* mustn’t pretend that we are not here to *“seek and save that which is lost”* by pulling away from our Responsibility as *“ambassadors of Christ,”* the *“treasure in earthen vessels.”* And so, as the Master Rabboni said and LIVED<sup>8</sup>, we relate practically Together in daily life, in the *midst* of the *“wicked and adulterous generation.”* It’s not “either/or”—it’s both.

But know this: *“the field is the WORLD,”* not “the field is the church.” He Commanded *“get the leaven OUT of the batch.”* God was clearly referring to the Church. He did NOT “contradict Himself” obviously, by then saying “Leave the leaven in the church and let it grow and take over My church.” In the Church *“we are to judge”* those *“who call themselves brothers”* (look it up<sup>9</sup>). But, in the WORLD we cannot, and must not try to “separate the wheat from the tares.”

We must allow the world to “*see how we love one another*”—not pull away into some kind of “commune” where we cannot reach those who are hungry for Him. And, as we are daily One with Him and each other, “*joined and knit together by every supporting ligament*” and “*contending as One man for the faith*,” living as “*a hundred mothers, brothers, and sisters*” WHILE in the midst of those held captive by the enemy in fear and pride and love of the world... then we have a Testimony that is “*not of this world.*” We are not responsible for “results” or “numbers,” and “recruiting sheep” is a *terrible* idea. But, we are responsible to “go to the highways and compel them” (neighbors, coworkers, biological family members, acquaintances) to come into Jesus’ arms.

So, what about the “tares”—the “weeds” that are in the world we will not hide from? While “*in the world but not of it*,” the Devil will always, in this lifetime, attempt to harm us with his deluded human, religious puppet-servants, and a host of demons. In this WORLD, there will always be wheat and tares mixed in the field. But GOD said, “*Get the leaven OUT of the batch*”<sup>10</sup> in the Church. Therefore, it makes perfect sense just as Jesus said. The wheat and tares are in the “world”<sup>11</sup>—not the Church.

It is our privilege and honor to “*set captives free*” and do “*greater works*” by His Spirit. Still, “*the road is narrow*” and “*few will be those who find it.*” We, too, will weep over those that He “*would have gathered as a hen gathers her chicks, but THEY would not.*” In this world we shall have tribulation. But, we rejoice that HE has overcome the world, and we are more than conquerors, through Him who loves us.

---

### Chapter 11 Footnotes

#### <sup>12</sup> Timothy 4:3

---

##### *New American Standard Bible*

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but wanting to have their ears tickled, they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires,

##### *God’s Word Translation*

A time will come when people will not listen to accurate teachings. Instead, they will follow their own desires and surround themselves with teachers who tell them what they want to hear.

##### *King James Bible*

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

##### *American Standard Version*

For the time will come when they will not endure the sound doctrine; but, having itching ears, will heap to themselves teachers after their own lusts;

*Bible in Basic English*

For the time will come when they will not take the true teaching; but, moved by their desires, they will get for themselves a great number of teachers for the pleasure of hearing them;

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

For there shall be a time, when they will not endure sound doctrine; but, according to their own desires, they will heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears:

*Darby Bible Translation*

For the time shall be when they will not bear sound teaching; but according to their own lusts will heap up to themselves teachers, having an itching ear;

---

**<sup>2</sup>New King James Version**

*Matthew 13:24-30*

<sup>24</sup>Another parable He put forth to them, saying: "The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; <sup>25</sup>but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went his way. <sup>26</sup>But when the grain had sprouted and produced a crop, then the tares also appeared. <sup>27</sup>So the servants of the owner came and said to him, 'Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have tares?' <sup>28</sup>He said to them, 'An enemy has done this.' The servants said to him, 'Do you want us then to go and gather them up?' <sup>29</sup>But he said, 'No, lest while you gather up the tares you also uproot the wheat with them. <sup>30</sup>Let both grow together until the harvest, and at the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, "First gather together the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn.'"

*Matthew 13:36-46*

<sup>36</sup>Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house. And His disciples came to Him, saying, "Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field." <sup>37</sup>He answered and said to them: "He who sows the good seed is the Son of Man. <sup>38</sup>The field is the world, the good seeds are the sons of the kingdom, but the tares are the sons of the wicked one. <sup>39</sup>The enemy who sowed them is the devil, the harvest is the end of the age, and the reapers are the angels. <sup>40</sup>Therefore as the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of this age. <sup>41</sup>The Son of Man will send out His angels, and they will gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who practice lawlessness, <sup>42</sup>and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. <sup>43</sup>Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!

<sup>44</sup>Again, the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and hid; and for joy over it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.

<sup>45</sup>Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant seeking beautiful pearls, <sup>46</sup>who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had and bought it.

---

**<sup>31</sup> Corinthians 5:4-13**

*New International Version*

<sup>4</sup>When you are assembled in the name of our Lord Jesus and I am with you in spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus is present, <sup>5</sup>hand this man over to Satan, so that the sinful nature may be destroyed and his spirit saved on the day of the Lord.

<sup>6</sup>Your boasting is not good. Don't you know that a little yeast works through the whole batch of dough? <sup>7</sup>Get rid of the old yeast that you may be a new batch without yeast—as

you really are. For Christ, our Passover lamb, has been sacrificed. <sup>8</sup>Therefore let us keep the Festival, not with the old yeast, the yeast of malice and wickedness, but with bread without yeast, the bread of sincerity and truth.

<sup>9</sup>I have written you in my letter not to associate with sexually immoral people— <sup>10</sup>not at all meaning the people of this world who are immoral, or the greedy and swindlers, or idolaters. In that case you would have to leave this world. <sup>11</sup>But now I am writing you that you must not associate with anyone who calls himself a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat.

<sup>12</sup>What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside? <sup>13</sup>God will judge those outside. “Expel the wicked man from among you.”

---

#### **<sup>4</sup>New King James Version**

##### *Matthew 21:42*

Jesus said to them, “Have you never read in the Scriptures:

“The stone which the builders rejected  
Has become the chief cornerstone.  
This was the LORD’s doing,  
And it is marvelous in our eyes?”

##### *1Peter 2:7-9*

Therefore, to you who believe, He is precious; but to those who are disobedient,

“The stone which the builders rejected  
Has become the chief cornerstone,”  
and “A stone of stumbling  
And a rock of offense.”

They stumble, being disobedient to the word, to which they also were appointed.

<sup>9</sup>But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;

---

#### **<sup>5</sup>Matthew 13:38**

##### *New American Standard Bible*

and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one;

##### *God’s Word Translation*

The field is the world. The good seeds are those who belong to the kingdom. The weeds are those who belong to the evil one.

##### *King James Bible*

The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

##### *Bible in Basic English*

And the field is the world; and the good seed is the sons of the kingdom; and the evil seeds are the sons of the Evil One;

##### *Darby Bible Translation*

and the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom, but the darnel are the sons of the evil one;

**<sup>6</sup>Revelation 3:16**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

‘So because you are lukewarm, and neither hot nor cold, I will spit you out of My mouth.

*God’s Word Translation*

But since you are lukewarm and not hot or cold, I’m going to spit you out of my mouth.

*King James Bible*

So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

*Bible in Basic English*

So because you are not one thing or the other, I will have no more to do with you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Thus because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I am about to spue thee out of my mouth.

*Tyndale New Testament*

So then because thou art between both, and nether cold ner hot, I will spew thee out of my mought:

*Weymouth New Testament*

Accordingly, because you are lukewarm and neither hot nor cold, before long I will vomit you out of My mouth.

*Webster’s Bible Translation*

So then, because thou art luke-warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit thee out of my mouth:

*Young’s Literal Translation*

So—because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I am about to vomit thee out of my mouth;

**<sup>7</sup>Galatians 1:10**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.

*God’s Word Translation*

Am I saying this now to win the approval of people or God? Am I trying to please people? If I were still trying to please people, I would not be Christ’s servant.

*King James Bible*

For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

*Bible in Basic English*

Am I now using arguments to men, or God? or is it my desire to give men pleasure? if I was still pleasing men, I would not be a servant of Christ.

*Darby Bible Translation*

For do I now seek to satisfy men or God? or do I seek to please men? If I were yet pleasing men, I were not Christ’s bondman.

*English Revised Version*

For am I now persuading men, or God? or am I seeking to please men? if I were still pleasing men, I should not be a servant of Christ.

*Tyndale New Testament*

Seek I now the faveour of men, or of God? Other go I about to please men? If I studied to please men, I were not the servant of Christ.

*Weymouth New Testament*

For is it man's favour or God's that I aspire to? Or am I seeking to please men? If I were still a man-pleaser, I should not be Christ's bondservant.

*Webster's Bible Translation*

For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

*World English Bible*

For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? For if I were still pleasing men, I wouldn't be a servant of Christ.

*Young's Literal Translation*

for now men do I persuade, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if yet men I did please—Christ's servant I should not be.

**<sup>8</sup>Luke 7:31-35**

---

*New King James Version*

And the Lord said, "To what then shall I liken the men of this generation, and what are they like? <sup>32</sup>They are like children sitting in the marketplace and calling to one another, saying:

'We played the flute for you,  
And you did not dance;  
We mourned to you,  
And you did not weep.'

For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine, and you say, 'He has a demon.' <sup>34</sup>The Son of Man has come eating and drinking, and you say, 'Look, a glutton and a winebibber, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!' <sup>35</sup>But wisdom is justified by all her children."

**<sup>9</sup>1 Corinthians 5:12-13**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For what have I to do with judging outsiders? Do you not judge those who are within the church?

But those who are outside, God judges. REMOVE THE WICKED MAN FROM AMONG YOURSELVES.

**<sup>10</sup>1 Corinthians 5:5-8**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

have decided to deliver such a one to Satan for the destruction of his flesh, so that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

Your boasting is not good. Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough? Clean out the old leaven so that you may be a new lump, just as you are in fact unleavened. For Christ our Passover also has been sacrificed. Therefore let us celebrate the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

**<sup>14</sup>Matthew 13:38**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one;

*God's Word Translation*

The field is the world. The good seeds are those who belong to the kingdom. The weeds are those who belong to the evil one.

*King James Bible*

The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

*Bible in Basic English*

And the field is the world; and the good seed is the sons of the kingdom; and the evil seeds are the sons of the Evil One;

*Darby Bible Translation*

and the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom, but the darnel are the sons of the evil one;

*English Revised Version*

and the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one;

*Tyndale New Testament*

the field is the world. The children of the kingdom are the good seed. The evil man's children are the tares.

*Weymouth New Testament*

the field is the world; the good seed—these are the sons of the Kingdom; the darnel, the sons of the Evil one.

*Webster's Bible Translation*

The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

*World English Bible*

the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the children of the Kingdom; and the darnel weeds are the children of the evil one.

*Young's Literal Translation*

and the field is the world, and the good seed, these are the sons of the reign, and the darnel are the sons of the evil one,

## Chapter 12



# In a Lampstand

Living God's way as a "Lampstand,"<sup>1</sup> as a church<sup>2</sup>, will have far different outworkings than a meeting-based form of religion could. In God's Plan there will be both "Fellowship" (intertwined lives), and an occasional need for "disFellowship." Count on it. God sets it up for us that way to test and equip<sup>3</sup> our hearts. And when it does need to happen, recall the Scriptures specified "don't eat with them, don't associate with them, and expel them from your midst." DisFellowship can only be a breaking off of deeply intertwined lives. In a church as God Intends, all are "*members of one another*" with relationships as vibrant and alive as a mother with her daughter, or as two loving siblings. That is simply Jesus' Plan<sup>4</sup>. In religious institutions consisting of weekly ceremonies, or meetings, speeches, talent shows, programs, org charts, pie chart budgets, buildings, calendar-driven events, and rituals<sup>5</sup>, all ruled over and presided over by a hired holy man or boss-man, there can never be the gift of disFellowship. There can be no true, daily fellowship "*from the least to the greatest*" when people "attend each other" on a prescribed day. Also, of course, leaven "filling the batch" is automatic in a meeting-based, cultural religious expression. One of God's most powerful Tools for assisting stubborn, weak, confused humans in becoming like the Son of God<sup>6</sup> is totally lost when there is little or no Koinonia, Fellowship.

*We can't step out of the Dance—if there never was any Music or Dancing!*

In normal culturalized christendom, if someone without Fellowship was asked to leave, there would be no deep, broken heart<sup>7</sup>—and very likely

no passionate repentance<sup>8</sup>. You already know what most folks do when asked to leave a meeting-based group, whether in a home or religious structure. They just wander on down the road to the next institution, “join” and happily blend in. They will “attend” that instead, and happily donate some likely small amount of their money, as required for membership. There is little turmoil in their hearts, or in those whom they are no longer with. Excommunication, or just “quitting,” are both painless and fruitless. Leaving an attendance-based organization is unlikely to create any long term issues for either party, since changing “churches” of this kind is not much more painful than “changing pajamas.”

On the other hand, what FATHER has Designed, Ordained, Commanded, and Enabled—is daily intimacy<sup>9</sup> of Life amongst all<sup>10</sup> its “members.”<sup>11</sup> THAT<sup>12</sup> is His Bride<sup>13</sup>, His Church that “the gates of Hell cannot overcome.” When any person is the beneficiary of LIFE, fullness of love, and quality of daily, intimate, Christ-centered relationships for them and their family, they will KNOW when it is lost to them.

Most people on earth can’t name four people they would entrust their children to for a weekend, let alone scores and hundreds who would die for them or their children—as is true in His Life where there is true “Church” and Koinonia. Without repentance, the loss for wounding Head and Body is staggering. But then, so is the Blessing for humbling ourselves to build His Way and obey His Commands, Together. And when we don’t have a number of others near us to share Life with, we will lay down our lives for all around us, come what may. That too is deeply honored by God.

If anyone has experienced His Provision in the Body, surrounded by daily truth and sustenance and supply of every kind, they will notice when it is removed, beyond question. If they have experienced a Safety net catching and supporting them in Jesus’ love and wisdom when issues fall on their heads on this fallen planet, they will know it when they have forfeited that Life by their stubborn shallowness or rebellion.

When “*the storms come*”<sup>14</sup> in life, whether issues of child rearing, or marriage, or desperate finance, or a thousand other things—they will know what is lost to them in those seasons. If a man “calls<sup>15</sup> himself a brother” and intentionally and repeatedly and lovelessly chooses to “crucify Jesus afresh”—and subsequently Koinonia is Biblically removed from them—he can never ignore that loss the rest of his earthly life.

The Good News is that those who are truly Twice-Born and Regenerate,<sup>16</sup>

with the Spirit of Christ as the “down payment,”<sup>17</sup> these will soften and turn<sup>18</sup> with help from Above in the Beauty of this Gift, this Tool of Father, disKoinonia. Just as a mother’s glance or look of disappointment can melt a child’s heart who has experienced her love, so also God’s Command and Gift of daily Koinonia in His Churches has amazing power to provide help in changing stubborn and foolish followers of Jesus. THAT’S what happened with the man discussed in 1Cor. 5. God is good.

---

*Chapter 12 Footnotes*

---

**<sup>1</sup>“Community”?? “House Church”?? OR, is there still HIGHER GROUND?**

[www.HouseChurch.com/Community](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Community)

---

**<sup>2</sup>Apostolic Foundations and Apostolic Patterns**

[www.HouseChurch.com/Apostolic](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Apostolic)

---

**<sup>3</sup>Judges 3:1-2**

*New American Standard Bible*

Now these are the nations which the LORD left, to test Israel by them (that is, all who had not experienced any of the wars of Canaan; only in order that the generations of the sons of Israel might be taught war, those who had not experienced it formerly).

---

**<sup>4</sup>New American Standard Bible**

*Mark 10:28-31*

Peter began to say to Him, “Behold, we have left everything and followed You.” Jesus said, “Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or farms, for My sake and for the gospel’s sake, but that he will receive a hundred times as much now in the present age, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and farms, along with persecutions; and in the age to come, eternal life. “But many who are first will be last, and the last, first.”

*Matthew 19:27-29*

Then Peter said to Him, “Behold, we have left everything and followed You; what then will there be for us?” And Jesus said to them, “Truly I say to you, that you who have followed Me, in the regeneration when the Son of Man will sit on His glorious throne, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or farms for My name’s sake, will receive many times as much, and will inherit eternal life.”

*Luke 18:28-30*

Peter said, “Behold, we have left our own homes and followed You.”

And He said to them, “Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, who will not receive many times as much at this time and in the age to come, eternal life.”

---

**<sup>5</sup>Liturgy, Ritual, “Services”....??**

[www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Ritual](http://www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Ritual)

## **6<sup>1</sup> Peter 2:21**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

For you have been called for this purpose, since Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example for you to follow in His steps,

### *God's Word Translation*

God called you to endure suffering because Christ suffered for you. He left you an example so that you could follow in his footsteps.

### *King James Bible*

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:

### *Bible in Basic English*

This is God's purpose for you: because Jesus himself underwent punishment for you, giving you an example, so that you might go in his footsteps:

### *Darby Bible Translation*

For to this have ye been called; for Christ also has suffered for you, leaving you a model that ye should follow in his steps:

## **7<sup>1</sup>Psalm 51:17**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit; A broken and a contrite heart, O God, You will not despise.

### *God's Word Translation*

The sacrifice pleasing to God is a broken spirit. O God, you do not despise a broken and sorrowful heart.

### *King James Bible*

The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.

### *Bible in Basic English*

The offerings of God are a broken spirit; a broken and sorrowing heart, O God, you will not put from you.

### *Darby Bible Translation*

The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.

## **8<sup>2</sup> Corinthians 7:6-11**

---

### *New King James Version*

<sup>6</sup>Nevertheless God, who comforts the downcast, comforted us by the coming of Titus, <sup>7</sup>and not only by his coming, but also by the consolation with which he was comforted in you, when he told us of your earnest desire, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced even more.

<sup>8</sup>For even if I made you sorry with my letter, I do not regret it; though I did regret it. For I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though only for a while. <sup>9</sup>Now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that your sorrow led to repentance. For you were made sorry in a godly manner, that you might suffer loss from us in nothing.

<sup>10</sup>For godly sorrow produces repentance leading to salvation, not to be regretted; but the

sorrow of the world produces death. <sup>11</sup>For observe this very thing, that you sorrowed in a godly manner: What diligence it produced in you, what clearing of yourselves, what indignation, what fear, what vehement desire, what zeal, what vindication! In all things you proved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

## 91 Corinthians 12

*New American Standard Bible*®

<sup>1</sup>Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I do not want you to be unaware. <sup>2</sup>You know that when you were pagans, you were led astray to the mute idols, however you were led.

<sup>3</sup>Therefore I make known to you that no one speaking by the Spirit of God says, "Jesus is accursed"; and no one can say, "Jesus is Lord," except by the Holy Spirit.

<sup>4</sup>Now there are varieties of gifts, but the same Spirit. <sup>5</sup>And there are varieties of ministries, and the same Lord. <sup>6</sup>There are varieties of effects, but the same God who works all things in all persons. <sup>7</sup>But to each one is given the manifestation of the Spirit for the common good. <sup>8</sup>For to one is given the word of wisdom through the Spirit, and to another the word of knowledge according to the same Spirit; <sup>9</sup>to another faith by the same Spirit, and to another gifts of healing by the one Spirit, <sup>10</sup>and to another the effecting of miracles, and to another prophecy, and to another the distinguishing of spirits, to another various kinds of tongues, and to another the interpretation of tongues. <sup>11</sup>But one and the same Spirit works all these things, distributing to each one individually just as He wills.

<sup>12</sup>For even as the body is one and yet has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ. <sup>13</sup>For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit.

<sup>14</sup>For the body is not one member, but many. <sup>15</sup>If the foot says, "Because I am not a hand, I am not a part of the body," it is not for this reason any the less a part of the body. <sup>16</sup>And if the ear says, "Because I am not an eye, I am not a part of the body," it is not for this reason any the less a part of the body. <sup>17</sup>If the whole body were an eye, where would the hearing be? If the whole were hearing, where would the sense of smell be? <sup>18</sup>But now God has placed the members, each one of them, in the body, just as He desired. <sup>19</sup>If they were all one member, where would the body be? <sup>20</sup>But now there are many members, but one body. <sup>21</sup>And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; or again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you." <sup>22</sup>On the contrary, it is much truer that the members of the body which seem to be weaker are necessary; <sup>23</sup>and those members of the body which we deem less honorable, on these we bestow more abundant honor, and our less presentable members become much more presentable, <sup>24</sup>whereas our more presentable members have no need of it. But God has so composed the body, giving more abundant honor to that member which lacked, <sup>25</sup>so that there may be no division in the body, but that the members may have the same care for one another. <sup>26</sup>And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

<sup>27</sup>Now you are Christ's body, and individually members of it. <sup>28</sup>And God has appointed in the church, first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, then miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, administrations, various kinds of tongues. <sup>29</sup>All are not apostles, are they? All are not prophets, are they? All are not teachers, are they? All are not workers of miracles, are they? <sup>30</sup>All do not have gifts of healings, do they? All do not speak with tongues, do they? All do not interpret, do they? <sup>31</sup>But earnestly desire the greater gifts. And I show you a still more excellent way.

<sup>10</sup>**Acts 2:44**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

And all those who had believed were together and had all things in common;

*God's Word Translation*

All the believers kept meeting together, and they shared everything with each other.

*King James Bible*

And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

*Bible in Basic English*

And all those who were of the faith kept together, and had all things in common; And all that believed were together, and had all things common,

<sup>11</sup>**Romans 12:5**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

so we, who are many, are one body in Christ, and individually members one of another.

*God's Word Translation*

In the same way, even though we are many individuals, Christ makes us one body and individuals who are connected to each other.

*King James Bible*

So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

*Bible in Basic English*

So we, though we are a number of persons, are one body in Christ, and are dependent on one another;

*Darby Bible Translation*

thus we, being many, are one body in Christ, and each one members one of the other.

<sup>12</sup>**Ephesians 5:27**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

that He might present to Himself the church in all her glory, having no spot or wrinkle or any such thing; but that she would be holy and blameless.

*God's Word Translation*

Then he could present it to himself as a glorious church, without any kind of stain or wrinkle-holy and without faults.

*King James Bible*

That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

*Bible in Basic English*

And might take it for himself, a church full of glory, not having one mark or fold or any such thing; but that it might be holy and complete.

*Darby Bible Translation*

that he might present the assembly to himself glorious, having no spot, or wrinkle, or any of such things; but that it might be holy and blameless.

**<sup>13</sup>Revelation 19:7**

*New American Standard Bible*

“Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him, for the marriage of the Lamb has come and His bride has made herself ready.”

*God’s Word Translation*

Let us rejoice, be happy, and give him glory because it’s time for the marriage of the lamb. His bride has made herself ready.

*King James Bible*

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

*Bible in Basic English*

Let us be glad with delight, and let us give glory to him: because the time is come for the Lamb to be married, and his wife has made herself ready.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Let us rejoice and exult, and give him glory; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife has made herself ready.

**<sup>14</sup>Matthew 7:21-28**

*New American Standard Bible*

“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven will enter. Many will say to Me on that day, ‘Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles? And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; DEPART FROM ME, YOU WHO PRACTICE LAWLESSNESS.”

“Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them, may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and yet it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock. Everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not act on them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand. The rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and it fell—and great was its fall.” When Jesus had finished these words, the crowds were amazed at His teaching;

**<sup>15</sup>1 Corinthians 5:11**

*New American Standard Bible*

But actually, I wrote to you not to associate with any so-called brother if he is an immoral person, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or a swindler— not even to eat with such a one.

*God’s Word Translation*

Now, what I meant was that you should not associate with people who call themselves brothers or sisters in the Christian faith but live in sexual sin, are greedy, worship false gods, use abusive language, get drunk, or are dishonest. Don’t eat with such people.

*King James Bible*

But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

*Bible in Basic English*

But the sense of my letter was that if a brother had the name of being one who went after the desires of the flesh, or had the desire for other people's property, or was in the way of using violent language, or being the worse for drink, or took by force what was not his, you might not keep company with such a one, or take food with him.

*Darby Bible Translation*

But now I have written to you, if any one called brother be fornicator, or avaricious, or idolater, or abusive, or a drunkard, or rapacious, not to mix with him; with such a one not even to eat.

**<sup>16</sup>Titus 3:3-7**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>3</sup>For we ourselves were also once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another. <sup>4</sup>But when the kindness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared, <sup>5</sup>not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit, <sup>6</sup>whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior, <sup>7</sup>that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

**<sup>17</sup>Ephesians 1:13-14**

---

*Amplified Bible*

In Him you also who have heard the Word of Truth, the glad tidings (Gospel) of your salvation, and have believed in and adhered to and relied on Him, were stamped with the seal of the long-promised Holy Spirit. That [Spirit] is the guarantee of our inheritance [the firstfruits, the pledge and foretaste, the down payment on our heritage], in anticipation of its full redemption and our acquiring [complete] possession of it—to the praise of His glory.

**<sup>18</sup>1 John 3:3-14**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>3</sup>And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

<sup>4</sup>Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. <sup>5</sup>And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. <sup>6</sup>Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him.

<sup>7</sup>Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. <sup>8</sup>He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. <sup>9</sup>Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

<sup>10</sup>In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother. <sup>11</sup>For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, <sup>12</sup>not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.

<sup>13</sup>Do not marvel, my brethren, if the world hates you. <sup>14</sup>We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love his brother abides in death.

## Chapter 13



# Lost Life and Glory

Let's assume that you ARE, or someday will be, a vital, functional, daily part of a "Lampstand" and therefore a "Church" (*"the seven Lampstands are the seven Churches"*), from God's Vantage point. Let's say you *do* then live in daily Intertwined Koinonia. If so, then you *will* face crises from time to time that institutional, attendance-based religious organizations will never face.

When Fellowship is removed from a person whom the church was trying to love and help, but that person hardens his heart<sup>1</sup> to Jesus (note the amazing context in the Verse just referenced!), they will generally scoff, blame, self-justify, and attempt to retaliate. The removal of Koinonia is very painful. True Fellowship<sup>2</sup> is something so powerful, so Heaven-sent, and so unique that if someone benefited from even being *near* Koinonia, for months or years or decades, but then their consciences are seared<sup>3</sup>, they will blow a gasket.

One who has given his flesh to the enemy<sup>4</sup>, rather than to Jesus, and is an unregenerate pretender, will sometimes not repent. And if they do not, they will be literally obsessed for decades to come, with lying, hating, and stalking in attempt to retaliate, as we'll see later. But, a confused or weak true Believer will soften and turn their life around to God when this "Tool in God's Toolbox" of dis-Koinonia, the loss of "a hundred mothers, brothers, sisters..." takes place. And what a thing of beauty that is.

The commitment to and necessity of only accepting God's Ways, daily Koinonia, in the church is obvious. This powerful Tool used by Father to help us "weak earthlings" is lost when we are "attendance-based" rather than daily-Life centered. There can be no "dis-Koinonia" or "dis-Fellowship" when Koinonia has not been our daily way of Life, as is God Ordained, in the first place. And thus, one of the great tragedies of modern christendom: Jesus became religiously "compartmentalized" into "a day and ceremony," instead of ALL of those who have Jesus living WITHIN them, living the way Jesus lived with the Twelve. And naturally this would also be the way<sup>5</sup> the one hundred and twenty lived with the three thousand (continuing as they grew, most say, to twenty thousand or so in Jerusalem).

When Koinonia was thrown away in religious organizations, one of Father's magnificent Tools was simultaneously jettisoned, and access to much of the Life and Power of God was forgotten. When daily love in His Family was reduced to an "orphanage mentality" of attendance and "staff"—tragedy came calling. When clergy/laity, and attendance-based calendar meetings, and leaven-welcoming rituals became "the way to 'have church,'" there was no way to hold back the flood of broken families, worldly teens, and permanent baby-hood for most christians. Instantly 90% of sin issues which could have been "nipped in the bud" (in relationships, family, business, and "personal time") were let loose to run their course towards ruin. *God's Ways*<sup>6</sup> to save lives and marriages and young people are not lacking. The problem is not with God, but that His Truths on this topic are almost entirely rejected in christendom. Primarily, these Truths are hated by those who love the world and by those who are trying to build kingdoms for themselves. One of God's key Declared means for remedying men's weaknesses and foolishness and honest-ignorance from the "*famine in hearing the Word*"<sup>7</sup>, Koinonia, has all but been discarded in christendom. It is still His CHURCH, functioning in His daily Life, that the gates of Hell can not overcome.

When did this Jesus-Life, the Acts 2:42-47 Quality of Life, change for the worst, historically<sup>8</sup>? When is LIFE thrown away, and the Lampstand removed<sup>9</sup> from any group of Believers today? The answer is here: we lose the Life and Power of God when worldliness and clergyism take root and rot away God's Intent<sup>10</sup> of daily Together<sup>11</sup>-Life in Christ<sup>12</sup>. The price of succumbing to "*the cares and worries of the world and the deceitfulness of riches*"<sup>13</sup> in christendom is unfathomably high, isn't it?

---

Chapter 13 Footnotes

**<sup>1</sup>Hebrews 3:8-14**

*New King James Version*

<sup>8</sup>Do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion,

In the day of trial in the wilderness,

<sup>9</sup>Where your fathers tested Me, tried Me,

And saw My works forty years.

<sup>10</sup>Therefore I was angry with that generation,

And said, "They always go astray in their heart,

And they have not known My ways.'

<sup>11</sup>So I swore in My wrath,

"They shall not enter My rest."

<sup>12</sup>Beware, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God; <sup>13</sup>but exhort one another daily, while it is called "Today," lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. <sup>14</sup>For we have become partakers of Christ if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end,

**<sup>2</sup>1 John 1:5-9**

*New King James Version*

Fellowship with Him and One Another

<sup>5</sup>This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all. <sup>6</sup>If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. <sup>7</sup>But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.

<sup>8</sup>If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. <sup>9</sup>If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

**<sup>3</sup>1 Timothy 4:2**

*New International Version*

Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron.

**<sup>4</sup>Romans 1:28**

*New American Standard Bible*

And just as they did not see fit to acknowledge God any longer, God gave them over to a depraved mind, to do those things which are not proper,

*God's Word Translation*

And because they thought it was worthless to acknowledge God, God allowed their own immoral minds to control them. So they do these indecent things.

*King James Bible*

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;

*American Standard Version*

And even as they refused to have God in their knowledge, God gave them up unto a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not fitting;

*Bible in Basic English*

And because they had not the mind to keep God in their knowledge, God gave them up to an evil mind, to do those things which are not right;

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

And as they liked not to have God in their knowledge, God delivered them up to a reprobate sense, to do those things which are not convenient;

*Darby Bible Translation*

And according as they did not think good to have God in their knowledge, God gave them up to a reprobate mind to practise unseemly things;

**<sup>5</sup>Acts 2:42-47**

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>42</sup>And they steadfastly persevered, devoting themselves constantly to the instruction and fellowship of the apostles, to the breaking of bread [including the Lord's Supper] and prayers.

<sup>43</sup>And a sense of awe (reverential fear) came upon every soul, and many wonders and signs were performed through the apostles (the special messengers).

<sup>44</sup>And all who believed (who adhered to and trusted in and relied on Jesus Christ) were united and [together] they had everything in common;

<sup>45</sup>And they sold their possessions (both their landed property and their movable goods) and distributed the price among all, according as any had need.

<sup>46</sup>And day after day they regularly assembled in the temple with united purpose, and in their homes they broke bread [including the Lord's Supper]. They partook of their food with gladness and simplicity and generous hearts,

<sup>47</sup>Constantly praising God and being in favor and goodwill with all the people; and the Lord kept adding [to their number] daily those who were being saved [from spiritual death].

**<sup>6</sup>New King James Version**

*Hebrews 3:12-14*

<sup>12</sup>Beware, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God; <sup>13</sup>but exhort one another daily, while it is called "Today," lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. <sup>14</sup>For we have become partakers of Christ if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end,

*1 Corinthians 12:20-26*

<sup>20</sup> But now indeed there are many members, yet one body. <sup>21</sup>And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; nor again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you." <sup>22</sup>No, much rather, those members of the body which seem to be weaker are necessary. <sup>23</sup>And those members of the body which we think to be less honorable, on these we bestow greater honor; and our unrepresentable parts have greater modesty, <sup>24</sup>but our representable parts have no need. But God composed the body, having given greater honor to that part which lacks it, <sup>25</sup>that there should be no schism in the body, but that

the members should have the same care for one another. <sup>26</sup>And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

---

**<sup>7</sup>Amos 8:11**

*New American Standard Bible*

“Behold, days are coming,” declares the Lord GOD, “When I will send a famine on the land, Not a famine for bread or a thirst for water, But rather for hearing the words of the LORD.”

*God’s Word Translation*

The days are going to come, declares the Almighty LORD, when I will send a famine throughout the land. It won’t be an ordinary famine or drought. Instead, there will be a famine of hearing the words of the LORD.

*King James Bible*

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord GOD, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the LORD:

*Bible in Basic English*

See, the days are coming, says the Lord God, when I will send times of great need on the land, not need of food or desire for water, but for hearing the words of the Lord.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Behold, days come, saith the Lord Jehovah, when I will send a famine in the land; not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of Jehovah.

---

**<sup>8</sup>Right Here, Right Now!**

[www.GodThots.com/Now](http://www.GodThots.com/Now)

---

**<sup>9</sup>Revelation 2:4-6**

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>4</sup>But I have this against you, that you have left your first love.

<sup>5</sup>Therefore remember from where you have fallen, and repent and do the deeds you did at first; or else I am coming to you and will remove your lampstand out of its place—unless you repent.

<sup>6</sup>Yet this you do have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

---

**<sup>10</sup>Ephesians 3:10**

*New American Standard Bible*

so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

*God’s Word Translation*

He did this so that now, through the church, he could let the rulers and authorities in heaven know his infinite wisdom.

*King James Bible*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

*Bible in Basic English*

So that now to the rulers and the authorities in the heavens might be made clear through the church the wide-shining wisdom of God,

*Darby Bible Translation*

in order that now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenlies might be made known through the assembly the all-various wisdom of God,

**<sup>11</sup>Hebrews 3:12-14**

---

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>12</sup>[Therefore beware] brethren, take care, lest there be in any one of you a wicked, unbelieving heart [which refuses to cleave to, trust in, and rely on Him], leading you to turn away and desert or stand aloof from the living God.

<sup>13</sup>But instead warn (admonish, urge, and encourage) one another every day, as long as it is called Today, that none of you may be hardened [into settled rebellion] by the deceitfulness of sin [by the fraudulence, the stratagem, the trickery which the delusive glamor of his sin may play on him].

<sup>14</sup>For we have become fellows with Christ (the Messiah) and share in all He has for us, if only we hold our first newborn confidence and original assured expectation [in virtue of which we are believers] firm and unshaken to the end.

**<sup>12</sup>1 Corinthians 12:12-27**

---

*Today's New International Version*

<sup>12</sup>Just as a body, though one, has many parts, but all its many parts form one body, so it is with Christ. <sup>13</sup>For we were all baptized by one Spirit so as to form one body—whether Jews or Gentiles, slave or free—and we were all given the one Spirit to drink. <sup>14</sup>Even so the body is not made up of one part but of many.

<sup>15</sup>Now if the foot should say, "Because I am not a hand, I do not belong to the body," it would not for that reason cease to be part of the body. <sup>16</sup>And if the ear should say, "Because I am not an eye, I do not belong to the body," it would not for that reason cease to be part of the body. <sup>17</sup>If the whole body were an eye, where would the sense of hearing be? If the whole body were an ear, where would the sense of smell be? <sup>18</sup>But in fact God has placed the parts in the body, every one of them, just as he wanted them to be. <sup>19</sup>If they were all one part, where would the body be? <sup>20</sup>As it is, there are many parts, but one body.

<sup>21</sup>The eye cannot say to the hand, "I don't need you!" And the head cannot say to the feet, "I don't need you!" <sup>22</sup>On the contrary, those parts of the body that seem to be weaker are indispensable, <sup>23</sup>and the parts that we think are less honorable we treat with special honor. And the parts that are unpresentable are treated with special modesty, <sup>24</sup>while our presentable parts need no special treatment. But God has put the body together, giving greater honor to the parts that lacked it, <sup>25</sup>so that there should be no division in the body, but that its parts should have equal concern for each other. <sup>26</sup>If one part suffers, every part suffers with it; if one part is honored, every part rejoices with it.

<sup>27</sup>Now you are the body of Christ, and each one of you is a part of it.

**13Matthew 13:18-23**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>18</sup>“Therefore hear the parable of the sower: <sup>19</sup>When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. <sup>20</sup> But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; <sup>21</sup>yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. <sup>22</sup>Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. <sup>23</sup>But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.”



## Chapter 14



# Who Would Even WANT “a Clean Stall”?!

**W**e’re asked from time to time if we have encountered the need to break off Koinonia, to disFellowship folks, at some point in time. The answer is, unfortunately and of course, yes. And, naturally, we have been brutally attacked by some of them in subsequent years, even a decade and a half after they were disfellowshipped. Yeah, wow, huh?! It’s no fun to go through that. Yet, I would submit that if disFellowship has *not* ever needed to happen in a Body of Believers, then either they have no Standard or regard for the Bible—or they are not even really *trying* to help humans overcome addictions, and sins, and rebellion in their lives. You can only have a “clean stall”<sup>1</sup> when nothing meaningful is going on. If there is no power or life, the stall stays pretty clean.

If you are trying *at all* to “*seek and save that which is lost*,” you will encounter the miracle of many lives transformed<sup>2</sup> from the power of greed, immorality, homosexuality, ignorance, rebellion, lust for material objects, pride, fear and many other addictive sins. Hallelujah to the Maker of all!

*On the other hand*, sometimes you’ll be betrayed and attacked by those you risked for, those you sacrificed to try to help. So be it. Because we all are created in God’s Image, all have choices to voluntarily worship the Creator, or “*deliberately forget*”<sup>3</sup> and live in sin. God wants “*all men*

*everywhere*” to repent and know Him. But, Jesus was clear that *“few will be those who find Me.”* That’s a lot of people (“All men” He would prefer to Save, minus “FEW will be those” who ARE Saved) who didn’t end up in His Presence after that “great and terrible Day of the Lord.” Jesus said clearly that “most” won’t make it, as they will not *“DO the will of My Father”* (Mat.7). It is not that God didn’t want to Save them, since Jesus said that He *“WOULD have gathered them as a hen gathers her chicks”* but *“they WOULD not”* bend their knee to Him. It was their choice, after He made provision for ALL. But, some would not *“HAVE this Man to be King over them.”* That is sad, but beautiful. He makes infinite Provision for all, but He has made us in His Image and wants us to WANT Him. Some will. Most will not, according to Jesus. But, what a BEAUTIFUL thing when men choose Him!

The “Parable of the Soils”<sup>4</sup> makes it clear that some people who seemingly want to follow Jesus will *“spring up quickly, with great joy.”* There is Life of some sort, for a time. However, eventually, when under pressure of persecution or loss, they show that they have never gone deep into Jesus. They are not ROOTED in Him for their sustenance. Consequently, they cannot be sustained on shallow life that is unRooted in Jesus when time passes and the heat is on. Jesus said that this type of shallow person, refusing to go Deep into Him, will wither and die.

Jesus said that others, too, are ALIVE. But over time they allowed greed, or pride, or worldliness, or cares and concerns regarding other false priorities (of which HE is not central) to “choke off the life” and kill what might have been. These people *have real names*, and you will know and shed tears for some of them!

Jesus spoke also, in Luke 13:5-9<sup>5</sup>, of the Fig Tree that was given *“one more year”* to be cared for. In context, both in this Parable and the surrounding Text, He was clearly speaking of religious people who claimed to know Him. Jesus said that pruning would become obligatory if there was no evidence of Life, even after caring for the tree—watering, fertilizing, and supplying all that it could need. If what ought to have Life and Fruit within would not respond to the gifts given it<sup>6</sup>, Jesus required that it be cut down and thrown into the fire. If it would bear no fruit of the Life it was given—even with the tender love and care of the Gardener—it must be pruned.

The examples are endless, but the point is simple: Even JESUS, PRESENT IN THE FLESH, was not anywhere near “100% successful” in turning men’s

hearts to Himself. He gave them choices. He “*WOULD have gathered them<sup>7</sup>, but they would not.*” Many to whom He extended His hand... betrayed Him. And, the majority He loved on and taught... walked away (John 6). Many who deserted Him “found a more convenient religion” when they didn’t get something for themselves, on their own timetable. It wasn’t all that hard to find an alternate religion that didn’t require a cross. In most forms of religion they could still wear a “cross” as jewelry on a necklace, and have a Jesus sticker on their chariot, but never give their lives to Him.

Most do leave Jesus, by His odds. “*The Road is narrow and few are found upon it.*” Why do they not love Him enough to stand by Him and His Truths? Because, they reason, “any ‘Messiah’ worth giving their life for ought to produce for them something they want.” And, if they don’t get what they want for themselves, then HE and His Truths are “false.” At least that’s how they have to play it, by their manufactured accusations and their murderous threats. It’s just how it went when He was here, and how He Himself Prophesied it would be when He was here on earth in His Church, His Body. Most don’t want the Cross, or the Inconvenient Truth of His Words<sup>8</sup>.

And what a shame! *His Dance to HIS Music—there is NOTHING BETTER<sup>9</sup>!*

Even so, it *is* a fact. If you are DOING anything worth doing, if you are trying to help any who are living in rebellion to their Maker and Savior, you WILL be “betrayed with a kiss” and lied about. “*If they hated Me, they WILL hate you.*”<sup>10</sup> If you are trying to help reprobate souls find Holy Ground to live upon in Christ, you WILL eventually need to break Fellowship with the Soils #2 and #3, or the “*one-more-year*”<sup>11</sup> fig tree. You will be hated by those who choose NOT to “*do the will of My Father*”—unless you totally “accept them” and pretend they are “okay” when they are not.

We can “be called-alongside one another daily”<sup>12</sup> as we’re Commanded, just as Jesus did with the twelve and the 120 did with the 3000, and STILL we will end up with issues, failures, and heartbreaks. Peter did with Ananias and Sapphira<sup>13</sup>, and Simon<sup>14</sup>, and others. Jesus had a Judas, and even a multitude walk away from Him in John 6. Eventually you, too, will encounter and be hated by a Korah, or a Balaam, or a Cain<sup>15</sup>, or a Jannes and Jambres, or a Diotrefes, or an Alexander. All situations have to be resolved one way or another. But, it is a risk worth taking. JESUS risked for you, and for me. He risked all, and we risk all, “*while they’re yet sinners.*”

And yes, of course many will put a short dagger in your back later while embracing you. This will happen even after you have sacrificed for them and their families in every conceivable and sacrificial way. They barely took notice, and denied later that the love and sacrifice ever happened, though the tear stains are still on their doorstep from where you spent the night weeping and praying for them, again and again.

As the Verse<sup>16</sup> says, the stall only gets dirty when we risk to honor and explore Jesus' Life and Power.

---

*Chapter 14 Footnotes*

**<sup>1</sup>Proverbs 14:4**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Where no oxen are, the manger is clean, But much revenue comes by the strength of the ox.

*God's Word Translation*

Where there are no cattle, the feeding trough is empty, but the strength of an ox produces plentiful harvests.

*King James Bible*

Where no oxen are, the crib is clean: but much increase is by the strength of the ox.

*Bible in Basic English*

Where there are no oxen, their food-place is clean; but much increase comes through the strength of the ox.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Where no oxen are, the crib is clean; but much increase is by the strength of the ox.

**<sup>2</sup>Colossians 1:13**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For He rescued us from the domain of darkness, and transferred us to the kingdom of His beloved Son,

*God's Word Translation*

God has rescued us from the power of darkness and has brought us into the kingdom of his Son, whom he loves.

*King James Bible*

Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

*Bible in Basic English*

Who has made us free from the power of evil and given us a place in the kingdom of the Son of his love;

*Darby Bible Translation*

who has delivered us from the authority of darkness, and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of his love:

### **<sup>3</sup>Romans 1:25-32**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>25</sup>who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

<sup>26</sup>For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature. <sup>27</sup>Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due.

<sup>28</sup>And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting; <sup>29</sup>being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers, <sup>30</sup>backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, <sup>31</sup>undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful; <sup>32</sup>who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.

### **<sup>4</sup>Matthew 13:18-23**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>18</sup>“Therefore hear the parable of the sower: <sup>19</sup>When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. <sup>20</sup>But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; <sup>21</sup>yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. <sup>22</sup>Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. <sup>23</sup>But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.”

### **<sup>5</sup>Luke 13:9**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

and if it bears fruit next year, fine; but if not, cut it down.”

#### *God's Word Translation*

Maybe next year it'll have figs. But if not, then cut it down.”

#### *King James Bible*

And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

And if, after that, it has fruit, it is well; if not, let it be cut down.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

and if it shall bear fruit but if not, after that thou shalt cut it down.

### **<sup>6</sup>Isaiah 5:1-6**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

<sup>1</sup>Let me sing now for my well-beloved  
A song of my beloved concerning His vineyard.

My well-beloved had a vineyard on a fertile hill.

<sup>2</sup>He dug it all around, removed its stones,

And planted it with the choicest vine

And He built a tower in the middle of it

And also hewed out a wine vat in it;

Then He expected it to produce good grapes,

But it produced only worthless ones.

<sup>3</sup>And now, O inhabitants of Jerusalem and men of Judah,

Judge between Me and My vineyard.

<sup>4</sup>What more was there to do for My vineyard that I have not done in it?

Why, when I expected it to produce good grapes did it produce worthless ones?

<sup>5</sup>So now let Me tell you what I am going to do to My vineyard:

I will remove its hedge and it will be consumed;

I will break down its wall and it will become trampled ground.

<sup>6</sup>I will lay it waste;

It will not be pruned or hoed,

But briars and thorns will come up

I will also charge the clouds to rain no rain on it.”

### **<sup>7</sup>Luke 13:34**

#### *New International Version*

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were not willing!

### **<sup>8</sup>John 12:48**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

He who rejects Me and does not receive My sayings, has one who judges him; the word I spoke is what will judge him at the last day.

#### *God's Word Translation*

Those who reject me by not accepting what I say have a judge appointed for them. The words that I have spoken will judge them on the last day.

#### *King James Bible*

He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

He who puts me on one side and does not take my words to heart, is not without a judge: the word which I have said will be his judge on the last day.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

He that rejects me and does not receive my words, has him who judges him: the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day.

### **<sup>9</sup>Matthew 11:25-30**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>25</sup>At that time Jesus answered and said, "I thank You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from the wise and prudent and have revealed them

to babes. <sup>26</sup>Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in Your sight. <sup>27</sup>All things have been delivered to Me by My Father, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and the one to whom the Son wills to reveal Him. <sup>28</sup>Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. <sup>29</sup>Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. <sup>30</sup>For My yoke is easy and My burden is light.”

### **<sup>10</sup>Matthew 10:22**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

“You will be hated by all because of My name, but it is the one who has endured to the end who will be saved.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

Everyone will hate you because you are committed to me. But the person who patiently endures to the end will be saved.

#### *King James Bible*

And ye shall be hated of all men for my name’s sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

#### *Bible in Basic English*

And you will be hated by all men because of my name: but he who is strong to the end will have salvation.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

and ye shall be hated of all on account of my name. But he that has endured to the end, he shall be saved.

### **<sup>11</sup>Luke 13:2-9**

---

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>2</sup>And Jesus answered and said to them, “Do you suppose that these Galileans were worse sinners than all other Galileans, because they suffered such things? <sup>3</sup>I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish. <sup>4</sup>Or those eighteen on whom the tower in Siloam fell and killed them, do you think that they were worse sinners than all other men who dwelt in Jerusalem? <sup>5</sup>I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish.”

<sup>6</sup>He also spoke this parable: “A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit on it and found none. <sup>7</sup>Then he said to the keeper of his vineyard, ‘Look, for three years I have come seeking fruit on this fig tree and find none. Cut it down; why does it use up the ground?’ <sup>8</sup>But he answered and said to him, ‘Sir, let it alone this year also, until I dig around it and fertilize it. <sup>9</sup>And if it bears fruit, well. But if not, after that you can cut it down.”

### **<sup>12</sup>Hebrews 3:13**

---

#### *New American Standard Bible*

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is still called “Today,” so that none of you will be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

#### *God’s Word Translation*

Encourage each other every day while you have the opportunity. If you do this, none of you will be deceived by sin and become stubborn.

*King James Bible*

But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

*Bible in Basic English*

But give comfort to one another every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin:

*Darby Bible Translation*

But encourage yourselves each day, as long as it is called To-day, that none of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

**<sup>13</sup>Acts 5:1-13**

*Holman Christian Standard Bible*

<sup>1</sup>But a man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a piece of property. <sup>2</sup>However, he kept back part of the proceeds with his wife's knowledge, and brought a portion of it and laid it at the apostles' feet.

<sup>3</sup>Then Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the proceeds from the field? <sup>4</sup>Wasn't it yours while you possessed it? And after it was sold, wasn't it at your disposal? Why is it that you planned this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God!" <sup>5</sup>When he heard these words, Ananias dropped dead, and a great fear came on all who heard. <sup>6</sup>The young men got up, wrapped [his body], carried him out, and buried him.

<sup>7</sup>There was an interval of about three hours; then his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. <sup>8</sup>"Tell me," Peter asked her, "did you sell the field for this price?"

"Yes," she said, "for that price."

<sup>9</sup>Then Peter said to her, "Why did you agree to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look! The feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out!"

<sup>10</sup>Instantly she dropped dead at his feet. When the young men came in, they found her dead, carried her out, and buried her beside her husband. <sup>11</sup>Then great fear came on the whole church and on all who heard these things.

<sup>12</sup>Many signs and wonders were being done among the people through the hands of the apostles. By common consent they would all meet in Solomon's Colonnade. <sup>13</sup>None of the rest dared to join them, but the people praised them highly.

**<sup>14</sup>Acts 8:18-24**

*New King James Version*

<sup>18</sup>And when Simon saw that through the laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given, he offered them money, <sup>19</sup>saying, "Give me this power also, that anyone on whom I lay hands may receive the Holy Spirit."

<sup>20</sup> But Peter said to him, "Your money perish with you, because you thought that the gift of God could be purchased with money! <sup>21</sup>You have neither part nor portion in this matter, for your heart is not right in the sight of God. <sup>22</sup>Repent therefore of this your wickedness, and pray God if perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you. <sup>23</sup>For I see that you are poisoned by bitterness and bound by iniquity."

<sup>24</sup>Then Simon answered and said, "Pray to the Lord for me, that none of the things which you have spoken may come upon me."

**15Jude 1:10-23**

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>10</sup>But these men revile (scoff and sneer at) anything they do not happen to be acquainted with and do not understand; and whatever they do understand physically [that which they know by mere instinct], like irrational beasts—by these they corrupt themselves and are destroyed (perish).

<sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have run riotously in the way of Cain, and have abandoned themselves for the sake of gain [it offers them, following] the error of Balaam, and have perished in rebellion [like that] of Korah!

<sup>12</sup>These are hidden reefs (elements of danger) in your love feasts, where they boldly feast sumptuously [carousing together in your midst], without scruples providing for themselves [alone]. They are clouds without water, swept along by the winds; trees, without fruit at the late autumn gathering time—twice (doubly) dead, [lifeless and] plucked up by the roots;

<sup>13</sup>Wild waves of the sea, flinging up the foam of their own shame and disgrace; wandering stars, for whom the gloom of eternal darkness has been reserved forever.

<sup>14</sup>It was of these people, moreover, that Enoch in the seventh [generation] from Adam prophesied when he said, Behold, the Lord comes with His myriads of holy ones (ten thousands of His saints)

<sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all and to convict all the impious (unholy ones) of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed [in such an] ungodly [way], and of all the severe (abusive, jarring) things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.

<sup>16</sup>These are inveterate murmurers (grumblers) who complain [of their lot in life], going after their own desires [controlled by their passions]; their talk is boastful and arrogant, [and they claim to] admire men's persons and pay people flattering compliments to gain advantage.

<sup>17</sup>But you must remember, beloved, the predictions which were made by the apostles (the special messengers) of our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).

<sup>18</sup>They told you beforehand, In the last days (in the end time) there will be scoffers [who seek to gratify their own unholy desires], following after their own ungodly passions.

<sup>19</sup>It is these who are [agitators] setting up distinctions and causing divisions—merely sensual [creatures, carnal, worldly-minded people], devoid of the [Holy] Spirit and destitute of any higher spiritual life.

<sup>20</sup>But you, beloved, build yourselves up [founded] on your most holy faith [make progress, rise like an edifice higher and higher], praying in the Holy Spirit;

<sup>21</sup>Guard and keep yourselves in the love of God; expect and patiently wait for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah)—[which will bring you] unto life eternal.

<sup>22</sup>And refute [so as to] convict some who dispute with you, and on some have mercy who waver and doubt.

<sup>23</sup>[Strive to] save others, snatching [them] out of [the] fire; on others take pity [but] with fear, loathing even the garment spotted by the flesh and polluted by their sensuality.

**<sup>16</sup>Proverbs 14:4**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Where no oxen are, the manger is clean, but much revenue comes by the strength of the ox.

*God's Word Translation*

Where there are no cattle, the feeding trough is empty, but the strength of an ox produces plentiful harvests.

*King James Bible*

Where no oxen are, the crib is clean: but much increase is by the strength of the ox.

*Bible in Basic English*

Where there are no oxen, their food-place is clean; but much increase comes through the strength of the ox.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Where no oxen are, the crib is clean; but much increase is by the strength of the ox.

## Chapter 15



### Real LIFE Stories

**S**o, yes. Because we have, by God's Grace, *had* true Fellowship (Acts 2:42-47, 1Cor.12), we have had dis-Koinonia as well. A number of times over the last 22 years we have been Required to break Koinonia—"not eat with them..." "not associate with them..." "expel them from our midst." Most of the dis-Koinonia we've been involved with happened over a decade ago. I suppose if we hadn't been so young and unwise with "bad building"<sup>1</sup> twenty years ago, we wouldn't have had so much of that kind of thing required of us ten and fifteen years ago. But, it happened. We had to break fellowship with many who told a good story (in an external sense), and some even had been so-called "pastors." Guess how much THAT matters about how much they love Jesus, or even were ever Christians by Jesus' definition? Not a whole bunch. Many we have known "knew their Bibles" in some way, but had virtually no Life whatsoever within them. By their fruit, and their commitment to Holiness for the Lamb of God, you shall know them.

Twenty years ago, due to misUnderstanding<sup>2</sup> of what a CHURCH really is, we allowed many to come and join our number who were religious, and some even "wildly" enthusiastic. "Oh, I have carried around a picture of the Bride in my pocket my whole christian life—and now I've found Her! I have to move here with my family! Please?" But this man, as one example, while boisterously quoting "famous historic teachers," would return home and abuse<sup>3</sup> his family, as well as live in wretched wild, religious obsessions, shopping obsessions, vanity obsessions, food obsessions, and

other dark things. Honestly, his personal life was repulsive in every way. I suppose, with the candor with which the Bible is written, John, Peter, and Paul would probably have named the dude's name right here, for as much evil as he has perpetrated in his lifetime, while pretending to be spiritual. But, we'll spare him that since he is just an example for your benefit. The point is, he was not yet Converted to Jesus, yet we allowed him to move to be with the church. We were still infants in our existence as a church when he asked to come, and frankly we didn't know any better. If a person "talked a good game," or were "friends of a friend" or some such nonsense, we were naive enough to consider that sufficient to receive them when they asked.

As for this man of this example, let's travel forward for eighteen years of God's people pouring out every effort for him, offering Koinonia and "*no needy persons among them*" daily love. The amount of money given to him was staggering, just to make a point that is impossible to "counterfeit" and is inescapable "evidence" of his later perjury. Several *tens* of thousands of dollars were spent to help him in times of need (ten jobs in thirteen years, according to his Christian wife whom he threw out), along with giving him and his family two cars and a van, over time. Even a newly constructed house was purchased amongst a neighborhood of a hundred or so Saints, since he wanted to live near us. There was daily love, working on his house (literally hundreds of man-hours with him on two different houses for him), going places and doing things with him, finding him jobs, and constantly meeting his needs. As God said through the Prophet, "*What more could have been done for My vineyard than was done? And yet it bore for Me only thorns and thistles.*"

Because this man never came "In" on the Ground of love—of God or love of others—his unRegenerate heart eventually mutated into deep and illegal sins. And, of course a satanic hatred and slander of those who had spent a decade and a half trying to save his life. "No good deed goes unpunished," as they say. But, would he have been welcomed in the first place, years earlier, if we had known the God of the Bible as well as we should have? No way. Would we have welcomed a man who claimed Christ, but showed so little evidence of knowing the Biblical Jesus in his daily life? If we had been mature enough to discern what should have been obvious, if we had taken a Stand way back then, what would have happened instead of all of the heartache that was returned for God's Love through His People? Only Father knows. But, so be it.

Jesus knew *He* would be betrayed with a kiss by Judas, and changed nothing to avoid this later agony.

If you are like us twenty-five years ago, and all you have ever known is cultural religion, where do you learn these things? We were never “mentored”<sup>4</sup> by anyone who had ever experienced Biblical Koinonia and daily Corporate Christ-Life. So, where do you Learn these things? It IS all in the Bible, so I suppose you learn it “at His Feet” in the trenches of daily life. Perhaps we call to the Lord of the Harvest, desiring to Fellowship with Him and one another, regardless of the cost to reputation or earthly gain? Yes, surely that.

Father actually DID make a Plan for how we can Learn by His Spirit in the midst of daily consecrated Life with one another. “*The pillar and foundation of Truth is the Ekklesia.*” And, “*God’s Intent is, now through the Church, to make known His many-faceted Wisdom.*”

Of course, twenty-five years ago we just “bought into” what we were “told in seminaries and conferences” or “saw in elders meetings” or “read in books.” (We didn’t notice until later that these christian books are often published by companies owned by pagan parent companies, with “pastor-authors” taking millions of dollars from God’s people.) How much can one learn from those who are not *themselves* LIVING the Life? “*Wisdom is proved Right by her CHILDREN,*” not her slogans or marketing. It is the OFFSPRING we want to see, not the flowery words<sup>5</sup>. UnBiblical lives and “churches” can only yield so much Truth before the contradictions between them and the Bible dismantle the Paradigm they are selling.

It took awhile to sort it out, and of course we’ll always be “sorting it out.” But, needless to say, when you welcome people who are “flattering” (see Jude) and enthusiastic—but who don’t know or obey Jesus at all—well, eventually you’ll either see them Converted to Jesus, or they will gouge your eyes out with a blunt stick when you ask them to leave God’s Family. And, as we’ve already shown, God’s Family, HIS Body, HIS Church is only for Christians, Biblically speaking.

And, oh yeah, there is also always a place for those who are “hanging around”<sup>6</sup> and keenly aware they are not yet Saved—but they want<sup>7</sup> to be.

Back to practicals. There have been only a very few instances we have needed to disKoinonia anyone in the most recent decade. But it has happened, and will likely happen again. The “*one more year*” of waiting,

and loving, and giving, and working for something that looks like the Life of Jesus...it's seldom exactly one year, of course. Sometimes it has lasted, for us, for 18 years of care and sacrifice for them. Sometimes their terrorizing sins and obdurate heart can only be tolerated for 5 weeks. That has happened, too. But, unless there is repentance, there can only be so much "time" to protect and wrestle with the unhidden stench of death, or fabricated christianity, or mutant christianity, or corrupted christianity. The Body of Christ must reflect the Head's view of such matters, and break Fellowship with them, if there is no honesty or repentance. They need to move on down the road and do something else.

Nearly always, when we have had to break Fellowship with someone who is married, or with a family, we have sent the entire family unit away together, when possible. Even if there are true Believers in that biological family, we have for twenty years tried to send them away together—in order to give the one who is in serious trouble Spiritually every opportunity to be Changed by the disFellowship. The one who has violated, abandoned, or has never found Jesus... will usually get the Best Chance<sup>8</sup> to be found in Him if their biological family sacrifices themselves in order to try to help him or her find Jesus. In hopes that Day will come. But, disKoinonia is mandatory for God's People, at certain times. His Commands are clear. "If we love Him, we will obey Him."

Back to the earlier example person... After the "Walls of Protection" were removed, he was "free" to sin "at will" with no one left around him to try to reason with Him in Christ. You need to know what really can happen in the real world of serving God and standing up to Satan, rather than playing religion on Sunday. Within months of living 250 kilometers away, and still viewing himself as the most spiritual person he knows... this man we disFellowshipped totally abandoned his biological family with several young children, was confronted by the police for abuse, divorced his wife and family against their will and public objections, took their van away from them, cancelled their lease and, in so doing, was throwing them out on the street. Within four *weeks* he moved in with another divorced woman he met where he worked. While he was spending money every which worldly place, he would have been starving his several children to death on the street by illegally refusing to support them—except that some Christians stepped in to help the family. Simultaneously, the disFellowshipped guy was fabricating stories, defaming those who cared for him for many years, lying on the internet, and soliciting a pagan "journalist" to blackmail his

wife and children he discarded to try to keep the law from his doorstep—all recorded in email and voice messages he should never have sent. Last we heard, he was on the verge of serious trouble for many criminal offenses with three different government agencies and the courts, in addition to the other immoral lifestyle he is engaged in as of this writing. That is the nature of deranged sin-life. And that is the practical reality of what you will face if you decide to take satan and his marionettes head-on, instead of “play church” and brush Truth and Jesus under the Sunday rug. But, what cost Jesus His physical life also caused Him to be Raised in Resurrection Power! Amen. *“It is the same now.”*

So then, from time to time in going on 25 years, we have needed to break Koinonia with some. At times it became necessary because there was virtually no evidence of their relationship with Jesus, or love of others. *God IS love*, and a man without love is a man without God, according to the Scriptures. Such a man or woman cannot be Saved without repentance. Some we have removed Koinonia from because of blatant sin<sup>9</sup>, or zero evidence<sup>10</sup> of Revelation<sup>11</sup> of the Son, or spineless man-pleasing<sup>12</sup>, which negates any chance of knowing God until there is a turning to Him and finding their life in Him. Some we have broken Fellowship with because our endless pleas to cease their love of the world<sup>13</sup> went unheeded.

Since *everyone* in a true church, large or small, is known intimately by many other saints, in all circumstances, on a nearly daily basis—at some point it’s not a “guess” when a person doesn’t really care about Jesus or want to stop “crucifying Him afresh.” In an “attendance-based” group, large or small, there is no way to know the difference between weakness and rebellion. But, just as any decent parent would know if their child is trying to live a secret life of sin, so also where there is true Life in Christ, together, it’s not that hard to know whether a person wants to live for Him, or not. And when there are no options left, Jesus Commands that Koinonia be removed.

Most organizations and “meeting-based” groups cannot avail themselves of this Miraculous Gift of disKoinonia to help change lives, precisely because they are “meeting-based” and not built upon daily Life in His Body<sup>14</sup>. If we have dared to Live together as He has called us, there will be times when you will *have* to remove that Koinonia from those in stubborn sin—in order to “snatch them from the fire.”

Practical Life, again. Some we have had to disFellowship over the years were very “lovable” in every “earthly” way. It can be confusing if we are not wise in God’s Ways, but “lovable personalities” who would “give you the shirt off of their backs”—that is *not* what the *CHURCH* is allowed to “be about.” We were merciful over the years towards such as these, and they do themselves readily speak loudly of our record of kindnesses and generosity and sacrifice for them. We have finally had to say “goodbye” to some we love dearly because they don’t know JESUS, as “nice” as they are. They “have no Root” in JESUS, unfortunately, and were not going towards Him in change. So, with tears in our eyes we have asked them to do something different, with others. Our parting words and actions to such as these have been, they attest: “We will love you, and will watch and pray for you, forever.” We have gone out of our way to visit with many of these, sometimes again and again, for years later, even when they have moved to other countries. We have paid mortgages, even years later, for some we have had to ask to leave. We have purchased vehicles, painted houses, paid bills, put on roofs, bought food and furnaces, helped with child or health tragedies, and many other such things—even long after we had broken Fellowship with them. Why would we do this? Because they are loved and respected, and very dear to us. But, even when loved and respected, that is not to say that anyone who is not Connected to the Vine in daily life can remain a part of the church.

If a person is not, with much care and love and outpouring of Truth and Opportunity, willing to live in the Spirit of Christ, they are not Biblically part of the church. There are evidences God gave us to help us know and understand who is just talking the talk, and who is Living in the Vine. Some of these “evidences”—penned sixty years after Pentecost (sixty years after the Church was Born)—are found in 1John, chapters 1 through 3.<sup>15</sup> These are especially potent since John was writing to some second and third generation followers of Jesus. These guys *may* have been just following in their parents’ footsteps, right, with no real relationship with Jesus of their own? John, by the Spirit, gives us some “ways to know”<sup>16</sup> if the Spirit of Christ lives in these folks (in his generation, and ours) who “knew the vocabulary,” but may or may not be Saved by knowing Him.

A person is not yet saved if they only know the vocabulary, but have never been Touched by the GodHead in a way that “flesh and blood could not have revealed.”<sup>17</sup> We cannot merely memorize what someone else has said, or be motivated by emotion, or peer pressure. *Translation*

from the Kingdom of Darkness to the Kingdom of the Beloved Son comes from relating to God Himself<sup>18</sup>. If that hasn't rrrreally happened, until they bend their knee to Jesus and are enveloped in His Life<sup>19</sup>, then they certainly cannot be part of His Body, by definition. As the Head thinks and feels, so also must the Body. What makes Jesus sick<sup>20</sup> *must* make His Body sick as well, if we are connected to the Head, Jesus.

There are no options available to "love people more than Jesus does." Of course, with unBelieving biological relatives, coworkers, neighbors, and acquaintances, we do love them. And naturally we will continually call out to God for His Mercy to make Himself irresistible to them. We will "always be ready to give a reason for the Hope that lies within us" and desire to "seek and save that which is confused and lost." We will always do what we can to serve, and love, and help. I would guess that over twenty thousand miles have been travelled by Saints here in recent months to visit biological relatives, to help in financial or health crises, or just to try to share the love of God with them. While we can't "yoke" or have "friendships"<sup>21</sup> with unBelievers<sup>22</sup> or those who are still unRegenerate, we certainly can love and share Jesus' Truths with "whosoever will." You'll even find, as we have, that there will be times for you to care for the needs of even vile blasphemers, and bail them out of serious moral and legal trouble. For Jesus' sake. We will always try to embrace in Adam even those we cannot yet embrace in Christ. And all of this with a smile of recognition that love in the first Adam can turn into love intertwined in the Second Adam.

---

Chapter 15 Footnotes

**<sup>1</sup>1 Corinthians 3:9-17**

*New King James Version*

<sup>9</sup>For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's field, you are God's building. <sup>10</sup>According to the grace of God which was given to me, as a wise master builder I have laid the foundation, and another builds on it. But let each one take heed how he builds on it.

<sup>11</sup>For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

<sup>12</sup>Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, <sup>13</sup>each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. <sup>14</sup>If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. <sup>15</sup>If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.

<sup>16</sup>Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? <sup>17</sup>If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.

## **<sup>2</sup>Entrances and Exits Part 1**

---

God's Awakening Call to Be the Body Of Christ, Rather Than to "Attend" Something  
[www.EkklesiaLife.com/Entrances](http://www.EkklesiaLife.com/Entrances)

## **<sup>3</sup>"Not Without My Daughter"**

---

[www.HisWounds.com/Control](http://www.HisWounds.com/Control)

## **<sup>4</sup>1 Thessalonians 1:6-7**

---

### *Amplified Bible*

And you [set yourselves to] become imitators of us and [through us] of the Lord Himself, for you welcomed our message in [spite of] much persecution, with joy [inspired] by the Holy Spirit;

So that you [thus] became a pattern to all the believers (those who adhere to, trust in, and rely on Christ Jesus) in Macedonia and Achaia (most of Greece).

## **<sup>5</sup>1 Corinthians 4:20**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

For the kingdom of God does not consist in words but in power.

### *God's Word Translation*

God's kingdom is not just talk, it is power.

### *King James Bible*

For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.

### *American Standard Version*

For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.

### *Bible in Basic English*

For the kingdom of God is not in word but in power.

### *Douay-Rheims Bible*

For the kingdom of God is not in speech, but in power.

## **<sup>6</sup>Leviticus 19:34**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

'The stranger who resides with you shall be to you as the native among you, and you shall love him as yourself, for you were aliens in the land of Egypt; I am the LORD your God.

### *God's Word Translation*

Foreigners living among you will be like your own people. Love them as you love yourself, because you were foreigners living in Egypt. I am the LORD your God.

### *King James Bible*

But the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you, and thou shalt love him as thyself; for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt: I am the LORD your God.

### *Bible in Basic English*

Let him be to you as one of your countrymen and have love for him as for yourself; for you were living in a strange land, in the land of Egypt: I am the Lord your God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

As one born among you shall the stranger who sojourneth with you be unto you; and thou shalt love him as thyself; for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt: I am Jehovah your God.

**7New King James Version**

---

*Acts 10:1-5*

There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of what was called the Italian Regiment, a devout man and one who feared God with all his household, who gave alms generously to the people, and prayed to God always. About the ninth hour of the day he saw clearly in a vision an angel of God coming in and saying to him, "Cornelius!"

And when he observed him, he was afraid, and said, "What is it, lord?"

So he said to him, "Your prayers and your alms have come up for a memorial before God. Now send men to Joppa, and send for Simon whose surname is Peter.

*Acts 11:13-14*

And he told us how he had seen an angel standing in his house, who said to him, 'Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter, who will tell you words by which you and all your household will be saved.'

**81 Corinthians 7:9-16**

---

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>9</sup>But if they have not self-control (restraint of their passions), they should marry. For it is better to marry than to be aflame [with passion and tortured continually with ungratified desire].

<sup>10</sup>But to the married people I give charge—not I but the Lord—that the wife is not to separate from her husband.

<sup>11</sup>But if she does [separate from and divorce him], let her remain single or else be reconciled to her husband. And [I charge] the husband [also] that he should not put away or divorce his wife.

<sup>12</sup>To the rest I declare—I, not the Lord [for Jesus did not discuss this]—that if any brother has a wife who does not believe [in Christ] and she consents to live with him, he should not leave or divorce her.

<sup>13</sup>And if any woman has an unbelieving husband and he consents to live with her, she should not leave or divorce him.

<sup>14</sup>For the unbelieving husband is set apart (separated, withdrawn from heathen contamination, and affiliated with the Christian people) by union with his consecrated (set-apart) wife, and the unbelieving wife is set apart and separated through union with her consecrated husband. Otherwise your children would be unclean (unblessed heathen, outside the Christian covenant), but as it is they are prepared for God [pure and clean].

<sup>15</sup>But if the unbelieving partner [actually] leaves, let him do so; in such [cases the remaining] brother or sister is not morally bound. But God has called us to peace.

<sup>16</sup>For, wife, how can you be sure of converting and saving your husband? Husband, how can you be sure of converting and saving your wife?

## **<sup>9</sup>1 John 3:3-10**

---

### *New Century Version*

Christ is pure, and all who have this hope in Christ keep themselves pure like Christ. The person who sins breaks God's law. Yes, sin is living against God's law. You know that Christ came to take away sins and that there is no sin in Christ. So anyone who lives in Christ does not go on sinning. Anyone who goes on sinning has never really understood Christ and has never known him. Dear children, do not let anyone lead you the wrong way. Christ is righteous. So to be like Christ a person must do what is right. The devil has been sinning since the beginning, so anyone who continues to sin belongs to the devil. The Son of God came for this purpose: to destroy the devil's work.

Those who are God's children do not continue sinning, because the new life from God remains in them. They are not able to go on sinning, because they have become children of God. So we can see who God's children are and who the devil's children are: Those who do not do what is right are not God's children, and those who do not love their brothers and sisters are not God's children.

## **<sup>10</sup>A Revelation of Christ**

---

[www.JesusistheOne.com/Revelation](http://www.JesusistheOne.com/Revelation)

## **<sup>11</sup>Matthew 16:17**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal this to you, but My Father who is in heaven.

### *God's Word Translation*

Jesus replied, "Simon, son of Jonah, you are blessed! No human revealed this to you, but my Father in heaven revealed it to you.

### *King James Bible*

And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

### *Bible in Basic English*

And Jesus made answer and said to him, A blessing on you, Simon Bar-jonah: because this knowledge has not come to you from flesh and blood, but from my Father in heaven.

### *Darby Bible Translation*

And Jesus answering said to him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona, for flesh and blood has not revealed it to thee, but my Father who is in the heavens.

## **<sup>12</sup>Galatians 1:10**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.

### *God's Word Translation*

Am I saying this now to win the approval of people or God? Am I trying to please people? If I were still trying to please people, I would not be Christ's servant.

### *King James Bible*

For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

*Bible in Basic English*

Am I now using arguments to men, or God? or is it my desire to give men pleasure? if I was still pleasing men, I would not be a servant of Christ.

*Darby Bible Translation*

For do I now seek to satisfy men or God? or do I seek to please men? If I were yet pleasing men, I were not Christ's bondman.

**131 John 2:15**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

*God's Word Translation*

Don't love the world and what it offers. Those who love the world don't have the Father's love in them.

*King James Bible*

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

*Bible in Basic English*

Have no love for the world or for the things which are in the world. If any man has love for the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Love not the world, nor the things in the world. If any one love the world, the love of the Father is not in him;

**14New International Version**

---

*Romans 12:10*

Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Honor one another above yourselves.

*1 John 3:11*

This is the message you heard from the beginning: We should love one another.

*John 13:34*

A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.

*Malachi 2:10*

Have we not all one Father ? Did not one God create us? Why do we profane the covenant of our fathers by breaking faith with one another?

*2 John 1:5*

And now, dear lady, I am not writing you a new command but one we have had from the beginning. I ask that we love one another.

*2 Corinthians 13:12*

Greet one another with a holy kiss.

*Ephesians 5:21*

Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ.

*1 Peter 4:9*

Offer hospitality to one another without grumbling.

*Ephesians 4:2*

Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.

*1 Thessalonians 5:11*

Therefore encourage one another and build each other up, just as in fact you are doing.

*Ephesians 4:32*

Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

*1 Peter 5:14*

Greet one another with a kiss of love. Peace to all of you who are in Christ.

*Romans 15:7*

Accept one another, then, just as Christ accepted you, in order to bring praise to God.

*Hebrews 10:24*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.

*Zechariah 7:9*

“This is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘Administer true justice; show mercy and compassion to one another.

*1 Corinthians 5:12*

What business is it of mine to judge those outside the church? Are you not to judge those inside?

*1 Peter 3:8*

Finally, all of you, live in harmony with one another; be sympathetic, love as brothers, be compassionate and humble.

*Hebrews 3:13*

But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness.

*Hebrews 10:24-25*

And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds. <sup>25</sup>Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another—and all the more as you see the Day approaching.

**<sup>15</sup>New American Standard Bible**

---

*1 John 1:6-7*

If we say that we have fellowship with Him and yet walk in the darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth; but if we walk in the Light as He Himself is in the Light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin.

*1 John 1:8-10*

If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar and His word is not in us.

*1 John 2:3-4*

By this we know that we have come to know Him, if we keep His commandments. The one who says, “I have come to know Him,” and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him;

## Chapter 15

### 1 John 2:3-4

By this we know that we have come to know Him, if we keep His commandments. The one who says, "I have come to know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him;

### 1 John 2:9-11

The one who says he is in the Light and yet hates his brother is in the darkness until now. The one who loves his brother abides in the Light and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But the one who hates his brother is in the darkness and walks in the darkness, and does not know where he is going because the darkness has blinded his eyes.

### 1 John 2:15

Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

### 1 John 2:17

The world is passing away, and also its lusts; but the one who does the will of God lives forever.

### 1 John 2:19

They went out from us, but they were not really of us; for if they had been of us, they would have remained with us; but they went out, so that it would be shown that they all are not of us.

### 1 John 2:23

Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father; the one who confesses the Son has the Father also.

### 1 John 2:24-27

As for you, let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. This is the promise which He Himself made to us: eternal life. <sup>26</sup>These things I have written to you concerning those who are trying to deceive you. As for you, the anointing which you received from Him abides in you, and you have no need for anyone to teach you; but as His anointing teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you abide in Him.

### 1 John 2:29

If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone also who practices righteousness is born of Him.

### 1 John 3:3

And everyone who has this hope fixed on Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

### 1 John 3:4-6

Everyone who practices sin also practices lawlessness; and sin is lawlessness. You know that He appeared in order to take away sins; and in Him there is no sin. No one who abides in Him sins; no one who sins has seen Him or knows Him.

### 1 John 3:8-9

The one who practices sin is of the devil; for the devil has sinned from the beginning. The Son of God appeared for this purpose, to destroy the works of the devil. No one who is born of God practices sin, because His seed abides in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

*1 John 3:10-13*

By this the children of God and the children of the devil are obvious: anyone who does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor the one who does not love his brother. For this is the message which you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another; not as Cain, who was of the evil one and slew his brother. And for what reason did he slay him? Because his deeds were evil, and his brother's were righteous. Do not be surprised, brethren, if the world hates you.

*1 John 3:14-15*

We know that we have passed out of death into life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love abides in death. Everyone who hates his brother is a murderer; and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

*1 John 3:16*

We know love by this, that He laid down His life for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

*1 John 3:17-19*

But whoever has the world's goods, and sees his brother in need and closes his heart against him, how does the love of God abide in him? Little children, let us not love with word or with tongue, but in deed and truth. We will know by this that we are of the truth, and will assure our heart before Him

*1 John 3:24*

The one who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him. We know by this that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has given us.

**<sup>16</sup>New King James Version**

---

*1 John 1:6-7*

If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.

*1 John 1:8-10*

If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.

*1 John 2:3-4*

Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, "I know Him," and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

*1 John 2:5-6*

But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.

*1 John 2:9-11*

He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.

## Chapter 15

### 1 John 2:15

Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

### 1 John 2:17

And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

### 1 John 2:19

They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us.

### 1 John 2:23

Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also.

### 1 John 2:24-27

Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. And this is the promise that He has promised us—eternal life. These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you. But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him.

### 1 John 2:29

If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him.

### 1 John 3:3

And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

### 1 John 3:4-6

<sup>4</sup>Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. <sup>5</sup>And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. <sup>6</sup>Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him.

### 1 John 3:8-9

He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

### 1 John 3:10-13

<sup>10</sup>In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother. <sup>11</sup>For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, <sup>12</sup>not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.

<sup>13</sup>Do not marvel, my brethren, if the world hates you.

*1 John 3:14-15*

<sup>14</sup>We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love his brother abides in death. <sup>15</sup>Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

*1 John 3:16*

<sup>16</sup>By this we know love, because He laid down His life for us. And we also ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

*1 John 3:17-19*

But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother in need, and shuts up his heart from him, how does the love of God abide in him?

My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth. And by this we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before Him.

*1 John 3:24*

Now he who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him. And by this we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has given us.

<sup>17</sup>**Matthew 16:16-18**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal this to you, but My Father who is in heaven. I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades will not overpower it.

<sup>18</sup>**John 1:11-13**

---

*Amplified Bible*

<sup>11</sup>He came to that which belonged to Him [to His own—His domain, creation, things, world], and they who were His own did not receive Him and did not welcome Him.

<sup>12</sup>But to as many as did receive and welcome Him, He gave the authority (power, privilege, right) to become the children of God, that is, to those who believe in (adhere to, trust in, and rely on) His name—

<sup>13</sup>Who owe their birth neither to bloods nor to the will of the flesh [that of physical impulse] nor to the will of man [that of a natural father], but to God. [They are born of God!]

<sup>19</sup>**Romans 8:5-14**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

<sup>5</sup>For those who are according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

<sup>6</sup>For the mind set on the flesh is death, but the mind set on the Spirit is life and peace,

<sup>7</sup>because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God, for it is not even able to do so,

<sup>8</sup>and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

<sup>9</sup>However, you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.

<sup>10</sup>If Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin, yet the spirit is alive because of righteousness.

<sup>11</sup>But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who dwells in you.

<sup>12</sup>So then, brethren, we are under obligation, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh—

<sup>13</sup>for if you are living according to the flesh, you must die; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

<sup>14</sup>For all who are being led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God.

---

**<sup>20</sup>Revelation 3:16**

*New American Standard Bible*

‘So because you are lukewarm, and neither hot nor cold, I will spit you out of My mouth.

*God’s Word Translation*

But since you are lukewarm and not hot or cold, I’m going to spit you out of my mouth.

*King James Bible*

So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

*Bible in Basic English*

So because you are not one thing or the other, I will have no more to do with you.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Thus because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I am about to spue thee out of my mouth.

---

**<sup>21</sup>James 4:4**

*New American Standard Bible*

You adulteresses, do you not know that friendship with the world is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

*God’s Word Translation*

You unfaithful people! Don’t you know that love for this evil world is hatred toward God? Whoever wants to be a friend of this world is an enemy of God.

*King James Bible*

Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

*Bible in Basic English*

O you who are false to God, do you not see that the friends of this world are not God’s friends? Every man desiring to be a friend of this world makes himself a hater of God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Adulteresses, know ye not that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore is minded to be the friend of the world is constituted enemy of God.

<sup>22</sup>**New King James Version**

---

*2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1*

<sup>14</sup>Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness? <sup>15</sup>And what accord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever? <sup>16</sup>And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? For you are the temple of the living God. As God has said:

“I will dwell in them  
And walk among them.  
I will be their God,  
And they shall be My people.”

<sup>17</sup>Therefore

“Come out from among them  
And be separate, says the Lord.  
Do not touch what is unclean,  
And I will receive you.”

<sup>18</sup>“I will be a Father to you,  
And you shall be My sons and daughters,  
Says the LORD Almighty.”

*2 Corinthians 7*

Therefore, having these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

## Chapter 16



# “And None Dared Join Them”

**J**f we want to “*See the Lord*,”<sup>1</sup> we must be committed to Love and Holiness. That’s our part. Since a miraculous Quality of Life Together in God’s Presence brings pleasure to Jesus, we are called to do our part for that to happen. In true Ekklesia, with true Koinonia, lives that very likely may have been impoverished or destroyed in another attendance-based scenario, are protected and enlarged by ten thousand percent in Ekklesia<sup>2</sup> that “*the gates of Hell cannot prevail against.*” It’s just His Plan<sup>3</sup>. The “raw material” is the same: “*Not many wise, not many powerful, not many noble.*”<sup>4</sup> But, His PLAN is “none of us have it all together, but all, Together, we have it all.”

For whatever reason He may have had, He did not INTEND for us to “*have no need of one another.*” He Desired that we would be “*joined and knit together by every supporting ligament*”—living as one with each other daily, as is your own human body one, member to member. And as with your human body and His, Ekklesia will have different parts, gifts, and purposes from body part to body part... but totally intertwined and one with one another, continuously. Can you imagine your hand “attending” your forearm once or twice a week? Hmmmmm.

The gifts and relationships available only<sup>5</sup> in daily Koinonia have an *amazing*<sup>6</sup> impact on our futures, according to the Scriptures. But, we’ll never see

that Miracle if we are willing to cut corners by selfishly and pridefully withholding vulnerability, daily self-sacrifice, and Koinonia from Jesus' Family<sup>7</sup> in the Church. Had there been no Koinonia in Jerusalem<sup>8</sup>, what happened in Acts 5 with Ananias and his wife<sup>9</sup> would have seemed strange and legalistic. It was hard enough to handle as it was. I'm sure Ananias and Sapphira's children, parents, and biological brothers and sisters would have been tempted to think it was "unfair" that they were now dead. And, nearly ALL religious bodies calling themselves "Christ-ian" today would scoff at the idea that "a little white lie" would be sufficient cause to be struck dead. It was shocking how serious Peter and the other Christians in the real Church were about Holiness. And God clearly viewed it the same as Peter and the others. We have proof of that, obviously.

GOD wanted the sins of Ananias and Sapphira to be addressed, and even publicly and radically, so it must not have been an "over-reaction" or "legalistic"—as many in Laodicea would say if the exact same thing were to happen in our day. It was RIGHT to uphold Truth and Life and Holiness, apparently. Certainly, the track record for most of christendom, filled with leaven, is that most assume that carnal sympathy and false love are a substitute for Truth. It is as if we genuinely believe we are "more loving than God" by our compromising decisions. And that "God of the Old Testament"—He's not real, either. Or He's finally seen the error of His ways, and changed to be more like compromising humans.

In Real Deal New Testament churches, there is sometimes a Mandate to remove Koinonia from even "nice folks." Perhaps it will "look like" what happened with Ananias and Sapphira, or it may be something like 1Cor.5, or perhaps more like Titus 3:10, or any number of ways Father would desire that Koinonia be withdrawn. *God's House is built with Wisdom*. But then, once a person has been removed from Koinonia, some interesting things, even supernatural things, can immediately begin to happen. In the case of Acts 5, part of the fallout was publicity and a major hit to "reputation" of the church in the town where they lived. *"None dared to join them"* because of the radical commitment to Holiness that God has ordained for His People. Apparently there was much gossip and fear that took place after Ananias and Sapphira had abruptly been dealt with. And the ultimate of "loss of Fellowship" took place, without "to him and him alone" or any such thing.

In spite of that fallout, God met them there. The influence and fruitfulness of God's Work, for those with pure hearts, actually INCREASED from

that moment on. “*Nevertheless*”<sup>10</sup> is a very shiny word, in this context. When we are faithful and obedient to courageously and lovingly engage ourselves in “bringing many sons to *GLORY*” (rather than bringing them to “attendance”)—Father rewards our willingness to be His loving, faithful *ambassadors*<sup>11</sup>. And He confirms and rewards those who will serve Him by tangibly “*wrestling to present one another perfect in Christ*”<sup>12</sup> rather than just singing or “studying” about it.

Often, when we do as the young church in Acts 2-6 did (as in the case of Ananias and Sapphira), even if not “understood” by all—there will be very quick “evidence” and “confirmation” of God’s Involvement. As we engage His “Tools” to reclaim lives from the enemy, as we Dance to HIS Music rather than the ever-popular Laodicean Dirge<sup>13</sup>, there will be various things that come up. Certainly, there will be *some* kind of response by those you must break from Fellowship. Paul described the process of removing Koinonia as “*turning them over to Satan*”—so they could learn the contrast between the beauty of God’s Ways, and the futility and darkness of pride and self-life that the Enemy tries to entice us with. That is no small thing.

When a person has chosen to betray or abandon the Head, Jesus, there must be a corresponding response by His Body, if we’re connected to the Head. Can you imagine your left hand rejecting a burning coal, but your face or leg not taking the message to heart of “avoid the burning coal”? Of course not. The Head decides for the Body, and we reflect what the Head is desiring. Sometimes, that is showing infinite patience and mercy under unbelievable adversity. Other times, being connected to the Head will mean being repulsed at lukewarmness and “vomiting” up the foreign matter, as Jesus does. It’s HIS call, case by case.

And if we are in Fellowship with Him and one another, daily, we will Know what to do—as we pursue Together. We’ll know just as surely as they KNEW “what to do” in Acts 13<sup>14</sup> and Acts 15<sup>15</sup>. Regardless of what happens in the “seen world,” Father is faithful to reward all who risk for Him out of a “*a pure heart, a good conscience, and a sincere faith.*”<sup>16</sup>

---

Chapter 16 Footnotes

<sup>1</sup>Hebrews 12:14

*New American Standard Bible*

Pursue peace with all men, and the sanctification without which no one will see the Lord.

*God's Word Translation*

Try to live peacefully with everyone, and try to live holy lives, because if you don't, you will not see the Lord.

*King James Bible*

Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

*Bible in Basic English*

Let your desire be for peace with all men, and to be made holy, without which no man may see the Lord;

*Darby Bible Translation*

Pursue peace with all, and holiness, without which no one shall see the Lord:

**<sup>2</sup>Matthew 16:18**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

"I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades will not overpower it.

*God's Word Translation*

You are Peter, and I can guarantee that on this rock I will build my church. And the gates of hell will not overpower it.

*King James Bible*

And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

*American Standard Version*

And I also say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

*Bible in Basic English*

And I say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock will my church be based, and the doors of hell will not overcome it.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And I also, I say unto thee that thou art Peter, and on this rock I will build my assembly, and hades' gates shall not prevail against it.

**<sup>3</sup>Ephesians 3:10**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

*God's Word Translation*

He did this so that now, through the church, he could let the rulers and authorities in heaven know his infinite wisdom.

*King James Bible*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

*Bible in Basic English*

So that now to the rulers and the authorities in the heavens might be made clear through the church the wide-shining wisdom of God,

*Darby Bible Translation*

in order that now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenlies might be made known through the assembly the all-various wisdom of God,

**41 Corinthians 1:26**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For consider your calling, brethren, that there were not many wise according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble;

*God's Word Translation*

Brothers and sisters, consider what you were when God called you to be Christians. Not many of you were wise from a human point of view. You were not in powerful positions or in the upper social classes.

*King James Bible*

For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:

*Bible in Basic English*

For you see God's design for you, my brothers, that he has not taken a great number of the wise after the flesh, not the strong, not the noble:

*Darby Bible Translation*

For consider your calling, brethren, that there are not many wise according to flesh, not many powerful, not many high-born.

**51 Corinthians 12:12-13:7**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>12</sup>For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ. <sup>13</sup>For by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body—whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free—and have all been made to drink into one Spirit. <sup>14</sup>For in fact the body is not one member but many.

<sup>15</sup>If the foot should say, "Because I am not a hand, I am not of the body," is it therefore not of the body? <sup>16</sup>And if the ear should say, "Because I am not an eye, I am not of the body," is it therefore not of the body? <sup>17</sup>If the whole body were an eye, where would be the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where would be the smelling? <sup>18</sup>But now God has set the members, each one of them, in the body just as He pleased. <sup>19</sup>And if they were all one member, where would the body be?

<sup>20</sup>But now indeed there are many members, yet one body. <sup>21</sup>And the eye cannot say to the hand, "I have no need of you"; nor again the head to the feet, "I have no need of you." <sup>22</sup>No, much rather, those members of the body which seem to be weaker are necessary. <sup>23</sup>And those members of the body which we think to be less honorable, on these we bestow greater honor; and our unpresentable parts have greater modesty, <sup>24</sup>but our presentable parts have no need. But God composed the body, having given greater honor to that part which lacks it, <sup>25</sup>that there should be no schism in the body, but that the members should have the same care for one another. <sup>26</sup>And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

<sup>27</sup>Now you are the body of Christ, and members individually. <sup>28</sup>And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, administrations, varieties of tongues. <sup>29</sup>Are all apostles? Are

all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all workers of miracles? <sup>30</sup> Do all have gifts of healings? Do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret? <sup>31</sup> But earnestly desire the best gifts. And yet I show you a more excellent way. <sup>1</sup> Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. <sup>2</sup> And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. <sup>3</sup> And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing.

<sup>4</sup> Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; <sup>5</sup> does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; <sup>6</sup> does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; <sup>7</sup> bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

### **<sup>6</sup>Ephesians 4:11-17**

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>11</sup> And He Himself gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers, <sup>12</sup> for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ, <sup>13</sup> till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ; <sup>14</sup> that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, <sup>15</sup> but, speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all things into Him who is the head—Christ— <sup>16</sup> from whom the whole body, joined and knit together by what every joint supplies, according to the effective working by which every part does its share, causes growth of the body for the edifying of itself in love.

<sup>17</sup> This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you should no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the futility of their mind,

### **<sup>7</sup>Mark 3:34**

#### *New American Standard Bible*

Looking about at those who were sitting around Him, He said, "Behold My mother and My brothers!

#### *God's Word Translation*

Then looking at those who sat in a circle around him, he said, "Look, here are my mother and my brothers.

#### *King James Bible*

And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

#### *Bible in Basic English*

And looking round at those who were seated about him, he said, See, my mother and my brothers!

#### *Douay-Rheims Bible*

And looking round about on them who sat about him, he saith: Behold my mother and my brethren.

#### *Darby Bible Translation*

And looking around in a circuit at those that were sitting around him, he says, Behold my mother and my brethren:

**<sup>8</sup>Acts 4:24-35**

*New King James Version*

<sup>24</sup>So when they heard that, they raised their voice to God with one accord and said: "Lord, You are God, who made heaven and earth and the sea, and all that is in them, <sup>25</sup>who by the mouth of Your servant David have said:

' Why did the nations rage,  
And the people plot vain things?  
<sup>26</sup>The kings of the earth took their stand,  
And the rulers were gathered together  
Against the LORD and against His Christ.'

<sup>27</sup>"For truly against Your holy Servant Jesus, whom You anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together <sup>28</sup>to do whatever Your hand and Your purpose determined before to be done. <sup>29</sup>Now, Lord, look on their threats, and grant to Your servants that with all boldness they may speak Your word, <sup>30</sup>by stretching out Your hand to heal, and that signs and wonders may be done through the name of Your holy Servant Jesus."

<sup>31</sup>And when they had prayed, the place where they were assembled together was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of God with boldness.

<sup>32</sup>Now the multitude of those who believed were of one heart and one soul; neither did anyone say that any of the things he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common. <sup>33</sup>And with great power the apostles gave witness to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus. And great grace was upon them all. <sup>34</sup>Nor was there anyone among them who lacked; for all who were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the proceeds of the things that were sold, <sup>35</sup>and laid them at the apostles' feet; and they distributed to each as anyone had need.

**<sup>9</sup>Acts 5:9-13**

*New King James Version*

<sup>9</sup>Then Peter said to her, "How is it that you have agreed together to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out." <sup>10</sup>Then immediately she fell down at his feet and breathed her last. And the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her out, buried her by her husband. <sup>11</sup>So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things.

<sup>12</sup>And through the hands of the apostles many signs and wonders were done among the people. And they were all with one accord in Solomon's Porch. <sup>13</sup>Yet none of the rest dared join them, but the people esteemed them highly.

**<sup>10</sup>Acts 5:13-14**

*New International Version*

No one else dared join them, even though they were highly regarded by the people. Nevertheless, more and more men and women believed in the Lord and were added to their number.

## **<sup>11</sup>2 Corinthians 5:20**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were making an appeal through us; we beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God.

### *God's Word Translation*

Therefore, we are Christ's representatives, and through us God is calling you. We beg you on behalf of Christ to become reunited with God.

### *King James Bible*

Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

### *Bible in Basic English*

So we are the representatives of Christ, as if God was making a request to you through us: we make our request to you, in the name of Christ, be at peace with God.

### *Darby Bible Translation*

We are ambassadors therefore for Christ, God as it were beseeching by us, we entreat for Christ, Be reconciled to God.

## **<sup>12</sup>Colossians 1:28**

---

### *New American Standard Bible*

We proclaim Him, admonishing every man and teaching every man with all wisdom, so that we may present every man complete in Christ.

### *God's Word Translation*

We spread the message about Christ as we instruct and teach everyone with all the wisdom there is. We want to present everyone as mature Christian people.

### *King James Bible*

Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:

### *Bible in Basic English*

Whom we are preaching; guiding and teaching every man in all wisdom, so that every man may be complete in Christ;

### *Darby Bible Translation*

whom we announce, admonishing every man, and teaching every man, in all wisdom, to the end that we may present every man perfect in Christ.

## **<sup>13</sup>Revelation 3:14-25**

---

### *New International Version*

<sup>14</sup>“To the angel of the church in Laodicea write:

These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation. <sup>15</sup>I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! <sup>16</sup>So, because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth. <sup>17</sup>You say, ‘I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.’ But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. <sup>18</sup>I counsel you to buy from me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see. <sup>19</sup>Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and

repent. <sup>20</sup>Here I am! I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in and eat with him, and he with me. <sup>21</sup>To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne. <sup>22</sup>He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

---

**<sup>14</sup>Acts 13:1-4**

*New International Version*

<sup>1</sup>In the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen (who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch) and Saul. <sup>2</sup>While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them.” <sup>3</sup>So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

<sup>4</sup>The two of them, sent on their way by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia and sailed from there to Cyprus.

---

**<sup>15</sup>Acts 15:28**

*New American Standard Bible*

For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us to lay upon you no greater burden than these essentials:

*God's Word Translation*

The Holy Spirit and we have agreed not to place any additional burdens on you. Do only what is necessary

*King James Bible*

For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things;

*Bible in Basic English*

For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us, to put on you nothing more than these necessary things;

---

**<sup>161</sup> Timothy 1:5**

*New American Standard Bible*

But the goal of our instruction is love from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith.

*God's Word Translation*

My goal in giving you this order is for love to flow from a pure heart, from a clear conscience, and from a sincere faith.

*King James Bible*

Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

*Bible in Basic English*

But the effect of the order is love coming from a clean heart, and a knowledge of what is right, and true faith:

*Darby Bible Translation*

But the end of what is enjoined is love out of a pure heart and a good conscience and unfeigned faith;



## Chapter 17



# Different Kinds of Soil, Different Kinds of Responses

**N**ow, if you haven't decided you want to "*die daily*" with all of your heart for the Lamb and His Bride, then that's that. If you don't yet think it would please Jesus to lay all that you are on the Altar for Him—your pride, your sleep and material objects when need be, your energy, your evenings and weekends, your career and relationships for Koinonia Jesus-Life—then it would seem "unnatural" that you would have read even this far. The rest of this discussion won't likely benefit or please you, either. It doesn't serve any purpose to consider responses to disKoinonia, as we are about to do, if there is no devotion to Jesus' heart for 1Cor.12 Life. If individualism and pride and selfishness and attendance pretty much describe the world you are in, and you don't mean for that to change, then that's that. But, if you are willing to pay the whole Price for the Pearl in His Kingdom, then you'll need to know what you are about to face when you remove Fellowship from various kinds of people.

What kind of reactions do folks have when true Koinonia is lost to them because of their obstinate or stony response to Jesus and His Truths?

Because disKoinonia was Created by God Himself, it is meant to be a Redemptive Tool for those who will soften their hearts to Him and learn, and allow their hearts to be Changed by Him. But, some whose *father is the devil*<sup>1</sup>, scoff at Redemption. Like their father<sup>2</sup> the devil, they even quote twisted Scriptures<sup>3</sup> to justify their sins.

Jesus said there were four kinds of soil in response to His Word, the Seed of Life. This is not meant to parallel the “four kinds of soil,” but there are actually various ways people respond after they’ve been disFellowshipped. Here are some types of responses you can expect if you lay your life down to participate in Koinonia in your midst, and then are obedient to remove that Fellowship when Called to do so...

1) We’ll describe this group quite thoroughly, because this gang is demonically “inspired” with the enemy’s twisted, dark wisdom. These will be the ones who will try incessantly with their hot breath to do you and your family harm, if you are not “aware of Satan’s schemes.” This bunch, the scoffers<sup>4</sup>, will nose-dive headlong into sin when they are faced with disKoinonia. Their sins are those which they had never renounced from the heart, even though because of the Quality of Life around them, they had been held back from these sins while living amongst the Church. When these guys are finally “free” to have no Standard of Jesus held up around them, they invariably lapse into a feeding frenzy of indulgence to satiate all of their flesh-animal desires. Since their hearts were “far from Him” and religion was for show, or for standing, or to have relationships—they may have stopped practicing some of the more evident sins while around the Church. But, because they had never truly repented to Jesus Himself about these things that “crucify afresh” the Lamb of God, they’ll “return to their vomit.”<sup>5</sup>

Those who never *really* turn to Jesus with their sin and self-life in the quietness of their hearts, eventually “accumulate” a sense of having been “cheated all along” from filling up their flesh with pagan holidays, lust, pride, ambition, alcohol, wander-lust, and other “gods” they worshipped. Some who we disFellowshipped for living in “strange fire” and loveless false religion immediately degraded themselves into alcohol and carousing after we “*expelled them from our midst.*” Others gave themselves to flirtatiousness with co-workers, leading to later divorces and adultery. Some became abusive of their spouses, and used Jesus to justify being arrogant control-freaks<sup>6</sup> in their homes. Others became totally consumed by hobbies or occupation. Some were drunk on gossip

or slander, lying, doctrinal delusions, religious activities where their lives are unaccountable, materialism, pride, fear, anger, foul language, or the various forms of internet<sup>7</sup> darkness (evil photos, slander, gossip, waste of time, strange religion, secret relationships, and other porn-darkness). This vulgarity after they were “expelled from our midst” confirmed quickly that the decision was Right to break Koinonia, because their hearts were clearly not His Alone. Their hearts could NOT have belonged to or have been settled on Jesus. They regarded Him for nothing in their speech and actions as soon as there were no others around them to prop them up. THAT is not Christianity.

“Wild-eyed, loud-mouthed, and religious” is nothing like Jesus<sup>8</sup>. But, this is often the unHoly “boldness” that these scoffers feel the need to foster in order to attempt to justify their sins. “You can’t fire me—I quit!” For eighteen years a person longed to be with God’s People and receive the massive spiritual and material and relational benefits found nowhere else but Koinonia, in this fallen planet of emptiness and pretense. But, when “expelled from our midst,” soon they must begin calling names and hating. Soon after being disFellowshipped, one said in print, “in eighteen years I never witnessed anything questionable.” Before a few more weeks had passed, when the insanity of sin had taken root and blossomed, he went into froth-mouthed convulsions trying to concoct lies about those who had carried him for many, many years. He was previously obviously elated to be with the Church, and never made the slightest effort to leave or complain for 18 years. Makes sense so far. But then.... he convulsed into insanity. In his own words, even expressed many times on tape, all was peachy—until he was asked to leave. THEN everything was different. “You can’t fire me, I quit! Let me fabricate an alternate version of history, even if it contradicts hundreds of witnesses from even other cities, and contradicts my own words and actions.” Hmmmmmm.

Those without the Spirit, or those trampling His Blood<sup>9</sup>, will press hard. Blaming others, blaming God, twisting Scriptures, or just mind-blocking and conscience-searing. The “infra-natural” demonstrations are impressive. And then there is bizarre “fellowship of Darkness” as perverted people magically find each other. But then, because they are basking in sinful flesh, they can’t even get along with each other for long, as they talk about each other behind their backs, and betray even each other.

It’s impressive how far and how dark a person can go, still acting “spiritual” in silky weird words, once they are given over to depravity. Even honest

outsiders, including unBelievers, see their deranged natures, as they hunch over their computers on company time, or in the dark hours after midnight, inventing schemes to try to maliciously harm and lie about others, as well as harm their families. If they are, like Judas, given over to sin and the darkness has “entered in”—they stalk, and they hate, and they stalk some more. Even a decade later, they have no life beyond hating and stalking and lying in the continued vain attempt to justify themselves when supernatural Life was lost to them forever, without repentance.

God did say<sup>10</sup> that some would be like that. It’s the same spirit that caused the Pharisees to conspire to kill Jesus *after* they witnessed him healing a man! Seeing God’s love and life and power didn’t soften them—it made them murderously angry. That’s not a response of honesty... but then *“our battle is not with flesh and blood, but with principalities and powers.”*

Their relentless obsession for evil and darkness and revenge can only be equated to that of a religious version of Ku Klux Klansman. Today’s “white pointy headed cloth mask” is now a higher tech version of the same spirit and objectives—hate and kill all who represent something you despise. Today’s media and internet is the KKK mask, as they attempt “grocery sack over the head” anonymity so as not to lose their jobs or civil freedom for harassment and hate crimes. Maybe the “WWW” is just another way for some to spell “KKK”. Of course, you’ll remember, the KKK thought they were the most “spiritual” and “right” in their days of persecuting others, too. They thought they were doing everyone else a favor by persecuting and hating others. After all, they were “cleaning up the world.” *“It is the same now.”*

It’s actually even intriguing how a person can give themselves over to the Enemy. Once the “Walls of Protection”<sup>11</sup> are removed<sup>12</sup>, they can mutate into something from a bad Sci-fi horror movie in a matter of weeks. That’s the nature of the “powerful delusion”<sup>13</sup> from God. They actually “believe” the delusions of their “perspectives” and “reasons” and “re-writing of history” that they and satan have created in the petri dish of their sins. And THEN God even “sends” convincing “proofs”<sup>14</sup> to those seeking self-justification and revenge, rather than Jesus and repentance. God Himself, oddly enough, has sworn to *help* their foul consciences to self-justify<sup>15</sup>. It’s really quite miraculous and impressive, all of it. They are simply returning to the vomit<sup>16</sup> they had never fully renounced in their hearts.

As Peter said, they “promise freedom” with big talk and “fine sounding arguments.” This is starting to sound like Paul at Miletus<sup>17</sup>, and 2 Peter<sup>18</sup>, and

Jude, isn't it? Maybe they weren't kidding? It's true. In "real life" this gang, for all of their warped doctrines and lies about a "freedom" that does not involve any accountability for their actions to God or man, are themselves slaves to depravity. These (in "group one") were only PROTECTED from their animal desires while in the Church, amongst God's People. But, when they were asked to leave, they were cut loose to their depravity and the acting out of the sins still in their heart. It was contained, for a time, by the Quality of Life around them, in the Life of Christ in His Church (Mat.16:18<sup>19</sup>, Eph.3:10<sup>20</sup>, 1Ti.3:15<sup>21</sup>). Their expulsion<sup>22</sup> without repentance "proved they were never<sup>23</sup> a part of you."

With these, don't fool yourself into thinking that they will not lie about you, totally disregarding even unbelievable sacrificial kindnesses and gifts to their family's survival financially and in every other way. It happens. Don't be surprised for someone (with now-massive degeneration into dark evils of nasty videos or websites, or demonic warcraft participation, or alcohol tirades, or malicious immoral divorce) to be slandering you to total strangers, making up lies and accusations that totally contradict what they themselves said in written form just weeks earlier. Enraged by jealousy<sup>24</sup>, lying is no problem for the deranged with seared consciences. Jesus said even one's own parents or children, or siblings, will sometimes bare rabid fangs and turn on them. *"Members of your own household, two against three, and three against two."* Can you imagine your own mother or father turning on you and viciously attacking you to strangers? It happens, if you dare to truly serve God, rather than just be religious. *"If they hated Me, they will hate you also."*

A brief primer, a tutorial in dealing with those who are given over to a "powerful delusion" when "their father the devil" is motivating and inspiring them. Don't think that "good communication" will clear anything up, or that kindness or humility with these will accomplish anything positive. Certainly, that is the Right response ANYWAY. But it would be a serious error to think that information or reasoning or facts will help anyone who loves to slander and hate. Nor will it help those who love to listen to their gossip, slander, or cruel hate. Their tactics are about "power" not truth. If you correct something they say with absolute proof, they will never apologize or alter their viewpoint. Their viewpoint and attacks were never based on anything except hatred, anyway. They were weapons, not confusion or misunderstanding. "Don't confuse me with the facts" remains their motto. When proven wrong, they will simply change the subject, or

accuse you of being defensive. They will not apologize or correct their error with those they slandered you to. It's a heart issue. It's not about what is true or not true. They don't care at all what is true, and therefore "information" or "proof" of ten thousand testimonies means absolutely nothing to them. If they are deluded by the enemy, they will simply change the subject and keep on attacking.

Read the book of Nehemiah<sup>25</sup> and you'll see again and again Satan's smear tactics (and a man of God's Response in the Spirit). The "chri-Islamic terrorists" love the cloak of darkness to stalk and harm God's people and their families. They have no conscience about lying and slandering those who cared for them, and sacrificed personally to help them out of their miry pit earlier in their life.

Don't make the mistake of thinking people like this are honest in any way. They are not just "trying to get you to do the right thing" as if they were innocently misunderstanding. You can't "change" enough or "admit" enough to ever sway them from their KKK course, even for decades to come. They are intent on destroying you (if that were possible)—not "reasoning" with you, or helping you, or serving Jesus. They don't want to hear about *anything* except your blood in the water. JESUS' Blood over your life—by your total trust in His Blood alone for your Salvation—will mean nothing to them whatsoever. Being "*clothed in Christ*"<sup>26</sup> will not mean anything to them, or dissuade them from being "*accusers of the brethren*."<sup>27</sup> They will even pray to their god, they admit, for your demise. They honestly believe they are serving their god<sup>28</sup>.

As long as you Stand for something they despise—the Character of Jesus lived out in daily Life—they will relentlessly hate and stalk you<sup>29</sup> to the sacrifice of food, or sleep, or even the loss of their jobs for illegal internet use during work hours. They will watch their own families fall apart around them, and have no real friends whatsoever, but they will barely notice because of their drunken obsession to hate and kill and get revenge for being disfellowshipped, even a decade or more later. In their delusion and lack of connection to the Vine or any Positive reason for living, they will believe you are uniquely qualified to be hated and hunted. And the only good prey is bloody prey, which they will spend their waking moments imagining how to accomplish.

Do you think that's an exaggeration? Not really. A man who had been caught in a terrible lie tapped a brother on the shoulder in a public place,

many months after anyone had seen him, and greeted him with a tirade of fury. "I'm a blackbelt in martial arts and have laid awake many nights pondering how I am going to dismember you." With Jesus, people with that much hatred and conniving were even temporarily able to accomplish that feat of killing Him.

But God had another Plan, for His Son, and His sons. It's Friday, but Sunday is on the way.

Wild stuff, eh? Non-human, even. Those who are "*given over to a powerful delusion, that they would believe the lie*"<sup>30</sup> are quite the trip. These are they whom the Apostle John wrote of in 1John 5, some sixty years after Pentecost, having watched how religious lives could mutate into the monsters Paul, Peter, and Jude had prophesied would emerge.

John wrote that some are so deranged that God would not answer prayer regarding their futures. Some are in so deep against Jesus, calling good evil and evil good, that He has turned them over to their master, the devil. These, He said, are not the ones we should spend our time in passionate prayer over, according to Jeremiah 7:16-20 and 1John 5:16-17<sup>31</sup>. We should pray for those who can yet be Turned, who have not been "*given over to a powerful delusion*" and are not yet fulfilling Hebrews 6:4-9 or Hebrews 10:23-31. Pray passionately and lovingly and patiently for those who are still honest in their hearts and want to hear His Voice and be Changed. These who are caught in ignorant or habitual sins, but with hearts very soft and desiring of Jesus as John described in 1John 3, pray for them, and passionately desire to help these! "*See to it brothers!*" that they get the daily help they need, in person, "*called alongside,*" as the Hebrews Writer also Commanded (Heb.3:12-14). But do know that some are past our ability to help them. In some ways this is reassuring, as we face satan's marionettes and tear down his kingdom, as Paul insisted Father has Called us to.

*"Now this is the confidence that we have in Him, that if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us. And if we know that He hears us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we have asked of Him. If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that. All unrighteousness is sin, and there is sin not leading to death."*

*"He will soon crush satan under your feet."*

While these types are allowed to be on this planet by Father for our strengthening and learning, they do truly mean to do you harm. God means it for Good, however. And God wins. “*We are more than conquerors*” through Jesus Christ. Since these dark ones *have nothing you want and are nothing you ever hope to be*, they can’t harm you. Because *they can take nothing from you* that you haven’t already died to—not popularity, not reputation, not material goods, not wealth, not power, not comfort—they are no threat to anyone but themselves, and perhaps some few naive with no Root. And, those who would believe deranged sinful men or women actually *need* to be seduced by those guys, so they won’t be a trouble to the Saints and “use up the ground.” That, too, is part of God’s Plan. So be it, and Amen.

There are other quite different responses that can occur when one was NOT connected to the Head, the Vine<sup>32</sup>. In spite of some “nice people who enjoy hanging around God’s People” (and blending in, as far as they are able), if they are not HIS, then breaking fellowship with them eventually happens, also. Here is their response:

2) Some will really do nothing in their lives after they are asked to leave (whichever myriad ways that one can be asked to leave). In such lethargy and irresponsibility, they are demonstrating that JESUS is not what they are “about,” truly. They lack love and passion and reality. And, by not “*pressing on*”<sup>33</sup> after being disFellowshipped, they definitely make an unfortunate statement about where their “faith” was all along. This, again, is actually a confirmation about what had been discerned about their lack of Connection to the Head, and thus His Body. There certainly must have been something other than JESUS that had their heart and interest all along, or they could not have lapsed into nothingness. When a person can’t stay focused enough to LIVE COURAGEOUSLY, and in Faith and Love, COME WHAT MAY, then they still need to find JESUS in their hearts and lives, and cannot have the Body if they aren’t clinging to the Head. They need to be Converted, no matter how “spiritual” or “knowledgeable” or “nice” they seemed previous to the day they were “cut loose.” Becoming “driftwood” when they are “on their own” is a Sign that they don’t know HIM, yet.

But all of that can totally change, if they’ll approach HIM honestly and humbly, and “call on the Name of the Lord.”

3) When asked to leave, and separated<sup>34</sup> by Decree (“one more year ....”)<sup>35</sup>, some will try to “do *something*” even if they are NOT in the VINE, Jesus.

These “religious” and “creative” and “energetic” self-efforts will often be hatched in a) ambition or b) craving attention or c) craving “respect” or d) craving “relationship”—even if it is mere religion, and still Christ-less. It doesn’t take much to satisfy them, because if they get the attention they crave, or can feel good about themselves, then that “drug” keeps them happy.

Some of these men or women will be movement-oriented—hoping for gratification, popularity, power, or pesos. This is certainly far from Jesus and true Christianity. Real Christianity is CROSS-oriented and requires no “pay back.” Sometimes the strange-fire energy to “start something” is hatched out of guilt, or pride (“I can do it better” or “I know more” or “MY MINISTRY” nonsense), or habit (culture, or up-bringing, or life-long hobby that they use to “define” themselves), or an “I’ll show you!”-based religion.

4) Some will do what the man in Corinth did (referred to in 1Cor. 5, 2Cor. 2, and 2Cor. 7). It’s possible to REPENT and turn to Jesus, and be merged into His Life! And then, he might be joined back into that local Body of Believers that had disfellowshipped him or her. OR, perhaps, working with the previous Body of Believers (never ignoring the disFellowship of another Body of Believers, EVER), he or she might be merged into the Life of Christ with other true-hearted obedient REAL Disciples of Jesus. These, too, will never give him a “free pass” on the pathetic life in sin, crucifying Jesus, either. He can, we can, look to Jesus, “the Author and Perfecter,” turn from sin, and be merged back into the organic daily Life of Jesus in His Body, if there is true repentance. *“Times of refreshing come from repentance!”*

---

Chapter 17 Footnotes

**John 8:44**

*New American Standard Bible*

“You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies.

*God’s Word Translation*

You come from your father, the devil, and you desire to do what your father wants you to do. The devil was a murderer from the beginning. He has never been truthful. He doesn’t know what the truth is. Whenever he tells a lie, he’s doing what comes naturally to him. He’s a liar and the father of lies.

*King James Bible*

Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

*Bible in Basic English*

You are the children of your father the Evil One and it is your pleasure to do his desires. From the first he was a taker of life; and he did not go in the true way because there is no true thing in him. When he says what is false, it is natural to him, for he is false and the father of what is false.

*Darby Bible Translation*

Ye are of the devil, as your father, and ye desire to do the lusts of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and has not stood in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks falsehood, he speaks of what is his own; for he is a liar and its father:

**<sup>21</sup> John 3:10**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

By this the children of God and the children of the devil are obvious: anyone who does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor the one who does not love his brother.

*God's Word Translation*

This is the way God's children are distinguished from the devil's children. Everyone who doesn't do what is right or love other believers isn't God's child.

*King James Bible*

In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

*Bible in Basic English*

In this way it is clear who are the children of God and who are the children of the Evil One; anyone who does not do righteousness or who has no love for his brother, is not a child of God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

In this are manifest the children of God and the children of the devil. Whoever does not practise righteousness is not of God, and he who does not love his brother.

**<sup>3</sup>Luke 4:1-14**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>1</sup>Then Jesus, being filled with the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, <sup>2</sup>being tempted for forty days by the devil. And in those days He ate nothing, and afterward, when they had ended, He was hungry.

<sup>3</sup>And the devil said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread."

<sup>4</sup>But Jesus answered him, saying, "It is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.'"

<sup>5</sup>Then the devil, taking Him up on a high mountain, showed Him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. <sup>6</sup>And the devil said to Him, "All this authority I will give You, and their glory; for this has been delivered to me, and I give it to whomever I wish.

<sup>7</sup>Therefore, if You will worship before me, all will be Yours.”

<sup>8</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, “Get behind Me, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.’”

<sup>9</sup>Then he brought Him to Jerusalem, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, “If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down from here. <sup>10</sup>For it is written:

‘He shall give His angels charge over you,  
To keep you,’

<sup>11</sup>and,

‘In their hands they shall bear you up,  
Lest you dash your foot against a stone.’”

<sup>12</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, “It has been said, ‘You shall not tempt the LORD your God.’”

<sup>13</sup>Now when the devil had ended every temptation, he departed from Him until an opportune time.

<sup>14</sup>Then Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit to Galilee, and news of Him went out through all the surrounding region.

#### **<sup>4</sup>Jude 1:10-19**

---

##### *New King James Version*

<sup>10</sup>But these speak evil of whatever they do not know; and whatever they know naturally, like brute beasts, in these things they corrupt themselves. <sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, have run greedily in the error of Balaam for profit, and perished in the rebellion of Korah.

<sup>12</sup>These are spots in your love feasts, while they feast with you without fear, serving only themselves. They are clouds without water, carried about by the winds; late autumn trees without fruit, twice dead, pulled up by the roots; <sup>13</sup>raging waves of the sea, foaming up their own shame; wandering stars for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever.

<sup>14</sup>Now Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men also, saying, “Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, <sup>15</sup>to execute judgment on all, to convict all who are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed in an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.”

<sup>16</sup>These are grumblers, complainers, walking according to their own lusts; and they mouth great swelling words, flattering people to gain advantage. <sup>17</sup>But you, beloved, remember the words which were spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>18</sup>how they told you that there would be mockers in the last time who would walk according to their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These are sensual persons, who cause divisions, not having the Spirit.

#### **<sup>5</sup>2 Peter 2:22**

---

##### *New American Standard Bible*

It has happened to them according to the true proverb, “A DOG RETURNS TO ITS OWN VOMIT,” and, “A sow, after washing, returns to wallowing in the mire.”

*God's Word Translation*

These proverbs have come true for them: "A dog goes back to its vomit," and "A sow that has been washed goes back to roll around in the mud."

*King James Bible*

But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

*Bible in Basic English*

They are an example of that true saying, The dog has gone back to the food it had put out, and the pig which had been washed to its rolling in the dirty earth.

*Darby Bible Translation*

But that word of the true proverb has happened to them: The dog has turned back to his own vomit; and, The washed sow to her rolling in mud.

**<sup>6</sup>"Not Without My Daughter"**

---

[www.HisWounds.com/Control](http://www.HisWounds.com/Control)

**<sup>7</sup>Chat Rooms, Blogs, Forums, Internet**

---

[www.HisWounds.com/Chatrooms](http://www.HisWounds.com/Chatrooms)

**<sup>8</sup>Matthew 12:18-20**

---

*Amplified Bible*

Behold, My Servant Whom I have chosen, My Beloved in and with Whom My soul is well pleased and has found its delight. I will put My Spirit upon Him, and He shall proclaim and show forth justice to the nations. He will not strive or wrangle or cry out loudly; nor will anyone hear His voice in the streets; A bruised reed He will not break, and a smoldering (dimly burning) wick He will not quench, till He brings justice and a just cause to victory.

**<sup>9</sup>Hebrews 6:4-7**

---

*New King James Version*

For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame. For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God;

**<sup>10</sup>Revelation 16:9-11**

---

*Amplified Bible*

People were severely burned (scorched) by the fiery heat, and they reviled and blasphemed the name of God, Who has control of these plagues, and they did not repent of their sins [felt no regret, contrition, and compunction for their waywardness, refusing to amend their ways] to give Him glory. Then the fifth [angel] emptied his bowl on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom was [plunged] in darkness; and people gnawed their tongues for the torment [of their excruciating distress and severe pain] And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their anguish and their ulcers (sores), and they did not deplore their wicked deeds or repent [for what they had done].

## **<sup>11</sup>THE CHURCH: GOD'S FORTRESS to Overcome Hell!**

---

[www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Fortress](http://www.EkklesiaChurchLife.com/Fortress)

### **<sup>12</sup>Job 1:6-22**

---

#### *New King James Version*

<sup>6</sup>Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan also came among them. <sup>7</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, "From where do you come?"

So Satan answered the LORD and said, "From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it."

<sup>8</sup>Then the LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?"

<sup>9</sup>So Satan answered the LORD and said, "Does Job fear God for nothing? <sup>10</sup>Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. <sup>11</sup>But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!"

<sup>12</sup>And the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, all that he has is in your power; only do not lay a hand on his person."

So Satan went out from the presence of the LORD.

#### Job Loses His Property and Children

<sup>13</sup>Now there was a day when his sons and daughters were eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house; <sup>14</sup>and a messenger came to Job and said, "The oxen were plowing and the donkeys feeding beside them, <sup>15</sup>when the Sabeans raided them and took them away—indeed they have killed the servants with the edge of the sword; and I alone have escaped to tell you!"

<sup>16</sup>While he was still speaking, another also came and said, "The fire of God fell from heaven and burned up the sheep and the servants, and consumed them; and I alone have escaped to tell you!"

<sup>17</sup>While he was still speaking, another also came and said, "The Chaldeans formed three bands, raided the camels and took them away, yes, and killed the servants with the edge of the sword; and I alone have escaped to tell you!"

<sup>18</sup>While he was still speaking, another also came and said, "Your sons and daughters were eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house, <sup>19</sup>and suddenly a great wind came from across the wilderness and struck the four corners of the house, and it fell on the young people, and they are dead; and I alone have escaped to tell you!"

<sup>20</sup> Then Job arose, tore his robe, and shaved his head; and he fell to the ground and worshiped. <sup>21</sup>And he said:

"Naked I came from my mother's womb,  
And naked shall I return there.  
The LORD gave, and the LORD has taken away;  
Blessed be the name of the LORD."

<sup>22</sup>In all this Job did not sin nor charge God with wrong.

---

**13<sup>2</sup> Thessalonians 2:10-11**

*New King James Version*

and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie.

---

**14<sup>2</sup> Thessalonians 2:9-12**

*New King James Version*

The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

---

**15<sup>2</sup> Timothy 4:3**

*New American Standard Bible*

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but wanting to have their ears tickled, they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires.

---

**16<sup>2</sup> Peter 2:17-22**

*New International Version*

These men are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them. For they mouth empty, boastful words and, by appealing to the lustful desires of sinful human nature, they entice people who are just escaping from those who live in error. They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity—for a man is a slave to whatever has mastered him. If they have escaped the corruption of the world by knowing our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and are again entangled in it and overcome, they are worse off at the end than they were at the beginning. It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than to have known it and then to turn their backs on the sacred command that was passed on to them. Of them the proverbs are true: “A dog returns to its vomit,” and, “A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.”

---

**17<sup>2</sup> Acts 20:20-32**

*New King James Version*

<sup>20</sup> how I kept back nothing that was helpful, but proclaimed it to you, and taught you publicly and from house to house, <sup>21</sup>testifying to Jews, and also to Greeks, repentance toward God and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>22</sup>And see, now I go bound in the spirit to Jerusalem, not knowing the things that will happen to me there, <sup>23</sup>except that the Holy Spirit testifies in every city, saying that chains and tribulations await me. <sup>24</sup>But none of these things move me; nor do I count my life dear to myself, so that I may finish my race with joy, and the ministry which I received from the Lord Jesus, to testify to the gospel of the grace of God.

<sup>25</sup>And indeed, now I know that you all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, will see my face no more. <sup>26</sup>Therefore I testify to you this day that I am innocent of the blood of all men. <sup>27</sup>For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God. <sup>28</sup>Therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among

which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood. <sup>29</sup>For I know this, that after my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock. <sup>30</sup>Also from among yourselves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after themselves. <sup>31</sup>Therefore watch, and remember that for three years I did not cease to warn everyone night and day with tears.

<sup>32</sup>“So now, brethren, I commend you to God and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.

---

**182 Peter 2:12-19**

*New King James Version*

<sup>12</sup>But these, like natural brute beasts made to be caught and destroyed, speak evil of the things they do not understand, and will utterly perish in their own corruption, <sup>13</sup>and will receive the wages of unrighteousness, as those who count it pleasure to carouse in the daytime. They are spots and blemishes, carousing in their own deceptions while they feast with you, <sup>14</sup>having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin, enticing unstable souls. They have a heart trained in covetous practices, and are accursed children. <sup>15</sup>They have forsaken the right way and gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; <sup>16</sup>but he was rebuked for his iniquity: a dumb donkey speaking with a man's voice restrained the madness of the prophet.

<sup>17</sup>These are wells without water, clouds carried by a tempest, for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever.

<sup>18</sup>For when they speak great swelling words of emptiness, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through lewdness, the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in error. <sup>19</sup>While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome, by him also he is brought into bondage.

---

**19Matthew 16:18**

*New American Standard Bible*

“I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades will not overpower it.

*God's Word Translation*

You are Peter, and I can guarantee that on this rock I will build my church. And the gates of hell will not overpower it.

*King James Bible*

And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

*Bible in Basic English*

And I say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock will my church be based, and the doors of hell will not overcome it.

---

**20Ephesians 3:10**

*New American Standard Bible*

so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.

*God's Word Translation*

He did this so that now, through the church, he could let the rulers and authorities in heaven know his infinite wisdom.

*King James Bible*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God.

*Bible in Basic English*

So that now to the rulers and the authorities in the heavens might be made clear through the church the wide-shining wisdom of God.

*Darby Bible Translation*

In order that now to the principalities and authorities in the heavenlies might be made known through the assembly the all-various wisdom of God.

*English Revised Version*

To the intent that now unto the principalities and the powers in the heavenly places might be made known through the church the manifold wisdom of God.

*Tyndale New Testament*

To the intent, that now unto the rulers and powers in heaven might be known by the congregation the manyfold wisdom of God.

*Weymouth New Testament*

In order that the Church might now be used to display to the powers and authorities in the heavenly realms the innumerable aspects of God's wisdom.

*Webster's Bible Translation*

To the intent that now to the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God.

*World English Bible*

To the intent that now through the assembly the manifold wisdom of God might be made known to the principalities and the powers in the heavenly places.

**21 Timothy 3:15**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

But in case I am delayed, I write so that you will know how one ought to conduct himself in the household of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and support of the truth.

*God's Word Translation*

In case I'm delayed, I want you to know how people who are members of God's family must live. God's family is the church of the living God, the pillar and foundation of the truth.

*King James Bible*

But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

*Bible in Basic English*

But if I am long in coming, this will make clear to you what behaviour is right for men in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and base of what is true.

*Darby Bible Translation*

But if I delay, in order that thou mayest know how one ought to conduct oneself in God's house, which is the assembly of the living God, the pillar and base of the truth.

**<sup>22</sup>Hebrews 3:12**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

Take care, brethren, that there not be in any one of you an evil, unbelieving heart that falls away from the living God.

*God's Word Translation*

Be careful, brothers and sisters, that none of you ever develop a wicked, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God.

*King James Bible*

Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

*Bible in Basic English*

My brothers, take care that there is not by chance in any one of you an evil heart without belief, turning away from the living God:

**<sup>23</sup>1 John 2:19**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

They went out from us, but they were not really of us; for if they had been of us, they would have remained with us; but they went out, so that it would be shown that they all are not of us.

*God's Word Translation*

They left us. However, they were never really part of us. If they had been, they would have stayed with us. But by leaving they made it clear that none of them were part of us.

*King James Bible*

They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

*Bible in Basic English*

They went out from us but they were not of us; if they had been of us they would still be with us: but they went out from us so that it might be made clear that they were not of us.

*Darby Bible Translation*

They went out from among us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have surely remained with us, but that they might be made manifest that none are of us.

**<sup>24</sup>New American Standard Bible**

---

*Matthew 27:18*

For he knew that because of envy they had handed Him over.

*Mark 15:10*

For he was aware that the chief priests had handed Him over because of envy.

*Acts 5:17*

But the high priest rose up, along with all his associates (that is the sect of the Sadducees), and they were filled with jealousy.

*Acts 7:9*

"The patriarchs became jealous of Joseph and sold him into Egypt. Yet God was with him."

*Acts 13:45*

But when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming.

*Acts 17:5*

But the Jews, becoming jealous and taking along some wicked men from the market place, formed a mob and set the city in an uproar; and attacking the house of Jason, they were seeking to bring them out to the people.

*Matthew 5:1-12*

<sup>1</sup>When Jesus saw the crowds, He went up on the mountain; and after He sat down, His disciples came to Him.

<sup>2</sup>He opened His mouth and began to teach them, saying,

<sup>3</sup>Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>4</sup>Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted.

<sup>5</sup>Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth.

<sup>6</sup>Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied.

<sup>7</sup>Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy.

<sup>8</sup>Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.

<sup>9</sup>Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God.

<sup>10</sup>Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>11</sup>Blessed are you when people insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me.

<sup>12</sup>Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

*Matthew 5:43-48*

<sup>43</sup>You have heard that it was said, 'YOU SHALL LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR and hate your enemy.'

<sup>44</sup>But I say to you, love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,

<sup>45</sup>so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.

<sup>46</sup>For if you love those who love you, what reward do you have? Do not even the tax collectors do the same?

<sup>47</sup>If you greet only your brothers, what more are you doing than others? Do not even the Gentiles do the same?

<sup>48</sup>Therefore you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.

**25New King James Version**

---

*Nehemiah 2:19*

But when Sanballat the Horonite, Tobiah the Ammonite official, and Geshem the Arab heard of it, they laughed at us and despised us, and said, "What is this thing that you are doing? Will you rebel against the king?"

*Nehemiah 4:1-3*

But it so happened, when Sanballat heard that we were rebuilding the wall, that he was furious and very indignant, and mocked the Jews. And he spoke before his brethren and the army of Samaria, and said, "What are these feeble Jews doing? Will they fortify themselves? Will they offer sacrifices? Will they complete it in a day? Will they revive the stones from the heaps of rubbish—stones that are burned?" Now Tobiah the Ammonite was beside him, and he said, "Whatever they build, if even a fox goes up on it, he will break down their stone wall."

*Nehemiah 4:7-8*

Now it happened, when Sanballat, Tobiah, the Arabs, the Ammonites, and the Ashdodites heard that the walls of Jerusalem were being restored and the gaps were beginning to be closed, that they became very angry, and all of them conspired together to come and attack Jerusalem and create confusion.

*Nehemiah 4:10-15*

Then Judah said, "The strength of the laborers is failing, and there is so much rubbish that we are not able to build the wall." And our adversaries said, "They will neither know nor see anything, till we come into their midst and kill them and cause the work to cease." So it was, when the Jews who dwelt near them came, that they told us ten times, "From whatever place you turn, they will be upon us." Therefore I positioned men behind the lower parts of the wall, at the openings; and I set the people according to their families, with their swords, their spears, and their bows. And I looked, and arose and said to the nobles, to the leaders, and to the rest of the people, "Do not be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, great and awesome, and fight for your brethren, your sons, your daughters, your wives, and your houses." And it happened, when our enemies heard that it was known to us, and that God had brought their plot to nothing, that all of us returned to the wall, everyone to his work.

*Nehemiah 6:1-14*

Now it happened when Sanballat, Tobiah, Geshem the Arab, and the rest of our enemies heard that I had rebuilt the wall, and that there were no breaks left in it (though at that time I had not hung the doors in the gates), that Sanballat and Geshem sent to me, saying, "Come, let us meet together among the villages in the plain of Ono." But they thought to do me harm.

So I sent messengers to them, saying, "I am doing a great work, so that I cannot come down. Why should the work cease while I leave it and go down to you?"

But they sent me this message four times, and I answered them in the same manner.

Then Sanballat sent his servant to me as before, the fifth time, with an open letter in his hand. In it was written:

It is reported among the nations, and Geshem says, that you and the Jews plan to rebel; therefore, according to these rumors, you are rebuilding the wall, that you may be their king. And you have also appointed prophets to proclaim concerning you at Jerusalem,

saying, "There is a king in Judah!" Now these matters will be reported to the king. So come, therefore, and let us consult together.

Then I sent to him, saying, "No such things as you say are being done, but you invent them in your own heart."

For they all were trying to make us afraid, saying, "Their hands will be weakened in the work, and it will not be done."

Now therefore, O God, strengthen my hands.

Afterward I came to the house of Shemaiah the son of Delaiah, the son of Mehetabel, who was a secret informer; and he said, "Let us meet together in the house of God, within the temple, and let us close the doors of the temple, for they are coming to kill you; indeed, at night they will come to kill you."

And I said, "Should such a man as I flee? And who is there such as I who would go into the temple to save his life? I will not go in!" Then I perceived that God had not sent him at all, but that he pronounced this prophecy against me because Tobiah and Sanballat had hired him. For this reason he was hired, that I should be afraid and act that way and sin, so that they might have cause for an evil report, that they might reproach me.

My God, remember Tobiah and Sanballat, according to these their works, and the prophetess Noadiah and the rest of the prophets who would have made me afraid.

#### *Nehemiah 6:19*

Also they reported his good deeds before me, and reported my words to him. Tobiah sent letters to frighten me.

#### *Nehemiah 7:3*

And I said to them, "Do not let the gates of Jerusalem be opened until the sun is hot; and while they stand guard, let them shut and bar the doors; and appoint guards from among the inhabitants of Jerusalem, one at his watch station and another in front of his own house."

#### *Nehemiah 8:5-6*

And Ezra opened the book in the sight of all the people, for he was standing above all the people; and when he opened it, all the people stood up. And Ezra blessed the LORD, the great God.

Then all the people answered, "Amen, Amen!" while lifting up their hands. And they bowed their heads and worshiped the LORD with their faces to the ground.

#### *Nehemiah 8:16-18*

<sup>16</sup>Then the people went out and brought them and made themselves booths, each one on the roof of his house, or in their courtyards or the courts of the house of God, and in the open square of the Water Gate and in the open square of the Gate of Ephraim. <sup>17</sup>So the whole assembly of those who had returned from the captivity made booths and sat under the booths; for since the days of Joshua the son of Nun until that day the children of Israel had not done so. And there was very great gladness. <sup>18</sup>Also day by day, from the first day until the last day, he read from the Book of the Law of God. And they kept the feast seven days; and on the eighth day there was a sacred assembly, according to the prescribed manner.

*Nehemiah 9:15-17*

<sup>15</sup>You gave them bread from heaven for their hunger,  
And brought them water out of the rock for their thirst,  
And told them to go in to possess the land  
Which You had sworn to give them.

<sup>16</sup>“But they and our fathers acted proudly,  
Hardened their necks,  
And did not heed Your commandments.

<sup>17</sup>They refused to obey,  
And they were not mindful of Your wonders  
That You did among them.  
But they hardened their necks,  
And in their rebellion  
They appointed a leader  
To return to their bondage.  
But You are God,  
Ready to pardon,  
Gracious and merciful,  
Slow to anger,  
Abundant in kindness,  
And did not forsake them.

*Nehemiah 13:1-30*

<sup>1</sup>On that day they read from the Book of Moses in the hearing of the people, and in it was found written that no Ammonite or Moabite should ever come into the assembly of God, <sup>2</sup>because they had not met the children of Israel with bread and water, but hired Balaam against them to curse them. However, our God turned the curse into a blessing. <sup>3</sup>So it was, when they had heard the Law, that they separated all the mixed multitude from Israel.

<sup>4</sup>Now before this, Eliashib the priest, having authority over the storerooms of the house of our God, was allied with Tobiah. <sup>5</sup>And he had prepared for him a large room, where previously they had stored the grain offerings, the frankincense, the articles, the tithes of grain, the new wine and oil, which were commanded to be given to the Levites and singers and gatekeepers, and the offerings for the priests. <sup>6</sup>But during all this I was not in Jerusalem, for in the thirty-second year of Artaxerxes king of Babylon I had returned to the king. Then after certain days I obtained leave from the king, <sup>7</sup>and I came to Jerusalem and discovered the evil that Eliashib had done for Tobiah, in preparing a room for him in the courts of the house of God. <sup>8</sup>And it grieved me bitterly; therefore I threw all the household goods of Tobiah out of the room. <sup>9</sup>Then I commanded them to cleanse the rooms; and I brought back into them the articles of the house of God, with the grain offering and the frankincense.

<sup>10</sup>I also realized that the portions for the Levites had not been given them; for each of the Levites and the singers who did the work had gone back to his field. <sup>11</sup>So I contended with the rulers, and said, “Why is the house of God forsaken?” And I gathered them together and set them in their place. <sup>12</sup>Then all Judah brought the tithe of the grain and the new wine and the oil to the storehouse. <sup>13</sup>And I appointed as treasurers over the storehouse Shelemiah the priest and Zadok the scribe, and of the Levites, Pedaiah; and next to them was Hanan the son of Zaccur, the son of Mattaniah; for they were considered faithful, and their task was to distribute to their brethren.

<sup>14</sup>Remember me, O my God, concerning this, and do not wipe out my good deeds that I have done for the house of my God, and for its services!

<sup>15</sup>In those days I saw people in Judah treading wine presses on the Sabbath, and bringing in sheaves, and loading donkeys with wine, grapes, figs, and all kinds of burdens, which they brought into Jerusalem on the Sabbath day. And I warned them about the day on which they were selling provisions. <sup>16</sup>Men of Tyre dwelt there also, who brought in fish and all kinds of goods, and sold them on the Sabbath to the children of Judah, and in Jerusalem.

<sup>17</sup>Then I contended with the nobles of Judah, and said to them, "What evil thing is this that you do, by which you profane the Sabbath day? <sup>18</sup>Did not your fathers do thus, and did not our God bring all this disaster on us and on this city? Yet you bring added wrath on Israel by profaning the Sabbath."

<sup>19</sup>So it was, at the gates of Jerusalem, as it began to be dark before the Sabbath, that I commanded the gates to be shut, and charged that they must not be opened till after the Sabbath. Then I posted some of my servants at the gates, so that no burdens would be brought in on the Sabbath day. <sup>20</sup>Now the merchants and sellers of all kinds of wares lodged outside Jerusalem once or twice.

<sup>21</sup>Then I warned them, and said to them, "Why do you spend the night around the wall? If you do so again, I will lay hands on you!" From that time on they came no more on the Sabbath. <sup>22</sup>And I commanded the Levites that they should cleanse themselves, and that they should go and guard the gates, to sanctify the Sabbath day.

Remember me, O my God, concerning this also, and spare me according to the greatness of Your mercy!

<sup>23</sup>In those days I also saw Jews who had married women of Ashdod, Ammon, and Moab. <sup>24</sup>And half of their children spoke the language of Ashdod, and could not speak the language of Judah, but spoke according to the language of one or the other people.

<sup>25</sup>So I contended with them and cursed them, struck some of them and pulled out their hair, and made them swear by God, saying, "You shall not give your daughters as wives to their sons, nor take their daughters for your sons or yourselves. <sup>26</sup>Did not Solomon king of Israel sin by these things? Yet among many nations there was no king like him, who was beloved of his God; and God made him king over all Israel. Nevertheless pagan women caused even him to sin. <sup>27</sup>Should we then hear of your doing all this great evil, transgressing against our God by marrying pagan women?"

<sup>28</sup>And one of the sons of Joiada, the son of Eliashib the high priest, was a son-in-law of Sanballat the Horonite; therefore I drove him from me.

<sup>29</sup>Remember them, O my God, because they have defiled the priesthood and the covenant of the priesthood and the Levites.

<sup>30</sup> Thus I cleansed them of everything pagan. I also assigned duties to the priests and the Levites, each to his service,

## <sup>26</sup> **New King James Version**

*Galatians 3:27*

For as many of you as were baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

*Romans 13:14*

But put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the flesh, to fulfill its lusts.

**27 Revelation 12:10**

---

*New King James Version*

Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, "Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down.

**28 John 16:2**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

"They will make you outcasts from the synagogue, but an hour is coming for everyone who kills you to think that he is offering service to God.

*God's Word Translation*

You will be thrown out of synagogues. Certainly, the time is coming when people who murder you will think that they are serving God.

*King James Bible*

They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

*Bible in Basic English*

They will put you out of the Synagogues: yes, the time is coming when whoever puts you to death will have the belief that he is doing God's pleasure.

*Darby Bible Translation*

They shall put you out of the synagogues; but the hour is coming that every one who kills you will think to render service to God;

*English Revised Version*

They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the hour cometh, that whosoever killeth you shall think that he offereth service unto God.

**29 Acts 23:21**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

"So do not listen to them, for more than forty of them are lying in wait for him who have bound themselves under a curse not to eat or drink until they slay him; and now they are ready and waiting for the promise from you."

*God's Word Translation*

Don't let them persuade you to do this. More than forty of them are planning to ambush him. They have asked God to curse them if they eat or drink anything before they have murdered him. They are ready now and are expecting you to promise that you will bring Paul."

*King James Bible*

But do not thou yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more than forty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

*Bible in Basic English*

But do not give way to them, for more than forty of them are waiting for him, having taken an oath not to take food or drink till they have put him to death: and now they are ready, waiting for your order.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

But do not thou give credit to them; for there lie in wait for him more than forty men of them, who have bound themselves by oath neither to eat, nor to drink, till they have killed him: and they are now ready, looking for a promise from thee.

**30 2 Thessalonians 2:11**

---

*New American Standard Bible*

For this reason God will send upon them a deluding influence so that they will believe what is false.

*God's Word Translation*

That's why God will send them a powerful delusion so that they will believe a lie.

*King James Bible*

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.

*American Standard Version*

And for this cause God sendeth them a working of error, that they should believe a lie.

*Bible in Basic English*

And for this cause, God will give them up to the power of deceit and they will put their faith in what is false.

*Douay-Rheims Bible*

Therefore God shall send them the operation of error, to believe lying.

*Darby Bible Translation*

And for this reason God sends to them a working of error, that they should believe what is false.

**31 New King James Version**

---

*Jeremiah 7:16-20*

<sup>16</sup>Therefore do not pray for this people, nor lift up a cry or prayer for them, nor make intercession to Me; for I will not hear you. <sup>17</sup>Do you not see what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? <sup>18</sup>The children gather wood, the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead dough, to make cakes for the queen of heaven; and they pour out drink offerings to other gods, that they may provoke Me to anger. <sup>19</sup>Do they provoke Me to anger?" says the LORD. "Do they not provoke themselves, to the shame of their own faces?"

<sup>20</sup>Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: "Behold, My anger and My fury will be poured out on this place—on man and on beast, on the trees of the field and on the fruit of the ground. And it will burn and not be quenched."

*1 John 5:16-17*

<sup>16</sup>If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that. <sup>17</sup>All unrighteousness is sin, and there is sin not leading to death.

**32 John 15**

---

*New King James Version*

<sup>1</sup>I am the true vine, and My Father is the vinedresser. <sup>2</sup>Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes away; and every branch that bears fruit He prunes, that it may

bear more fruit. <sup>3</sup>You are already clean because of the word which I have spoken to you. <sup>4</sup>Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither can you, unless you abide in Me.

<sup>5</sup>"I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing. <sup>6</sup>If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned. <sup>7</sup>If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you. <sup>8</sup>By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.

<sup>9</sup>"As the Father loved Me, I also have loved you; abide in My love. <sup>10</sup>If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love.

<sup>11</sup>"These things I have spoken to you, that My joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be full. <sup>12</sup>This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. <sup>13</sup>Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his friends. <sup>14</sup>You are My friends if you do whatever I command you. <sup>15</sup>No longer do I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I heard from My Father I have made known to you. <sup>16</sup>You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain, that whatever you ask the Father in My name He may give you. <sup>17</sup>These things I command you, that you love one another.

<sup>18</sup>"If the world hates you, you know that it hated Me before it hated you. <sup>19</sup>If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. <sup>20</sup>Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. <sup>21</sup>But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me. <sup>22</sup>If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin. <sup>23</sup>He who hates Me hates My Father also. <sup>24</sup>If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they have seen and also hated both Me and My Father. <sup>25</sup>But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law, 'They hated Me without a cause.'

<sup>26</sup>"But when the Helper comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father, He will testify of Me. <sup>27</sup>And you also will bear witness, because you have been with Me from the beginning.

### **33** *Philippians 3:12-14*

#### *New International Version*

Not that I have already obtained all this, or have already been made perfect, but I press on to take hold of that for which Christ Jesus took hold of me. <sup>13</sup>Brothers, I do not consider myself yet to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind and straining toward what is ahead, <sup>14</sup>I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus.

### **34** *1 Corinthians 5:12-13*

#### *Amplified Bible*

What [business] of mine is it and what right have I to judge outsiders? Is it not those

inside [the church] upon whom you are to pass disciplinary judgment [passing censuring sentence on them as the facts require]? God alone sits in judgment on those who are outside. Drive out that wicked one from among you [expel him from your church].

<sup>35</sup>**Luke 13:2-9**

*New King James Version*

And Jesus answered and said to them, "Do you suppose that these Galileans were worse sinners than all other Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish. Or those eighteen on whom the tower in Siloam fell and killed them, do you think that they were worse sinners than all other men who dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish."

He also spoke this parable: "A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit on it and found none. Then he said to the keeper of his vineyard, 'Look, for three years I have come seeking fruit on this fig tree and find none. Cut it down; why does it use up the ground?' But he answered and said to him, 'Sir, let it alone this year also, until I dig around it and fertilize it. And if it bears fruit, well. But if not, after that you can cut it down.'"

## Chapter 18



### All for Now

What IS Christianity, in a brief summary? It is *Life in the Vine*, living through the Head, in the Body. Christianity is exemplified by its demonstration of LIFE, even while it is in the “Trenches” of pain. Jesus’ Life within shows forth supernatural patience, relentless love, and courage to draw the Line—where Jesus does—regardless of COSTS, just as Jesus did. Those “costs” can be personal or emotional or financial or reputation or relational or health. If JESUS lives within, and we are therefore Christians, we’ll live that way. Those who won’t go to the Place where JESUS is and LIVE it, “come what may,” are (as numbered previously) either 1) deranged, or 2) drift-wood, or 3) self-life religious flesh-monsters who just happen to be energized for “RELIGION” as their earth-thing.

No matter the spiritual “talk-track” of those listed above as 1) 2) 3), when these folks are cut loose, they all have serious problems with the Head and the Vine, demonstrating and confirming that the painful decision to break off Koinonia was Correct. Once the “walls of Protection” are not around them in the form of 1Cor.12 Life, all of the cleverness, memory, storytelling, singing, or ability to mimic others and put their own “signature” on it—none of that means anything. It is not Life in the VINE. If they can easily lapse into 1) 2) or 3), they are not Connected to the Head, and cannot by definition be allowed to stay in the Body, saith the Lord.

“Borrowed truth” and “ways” and “ideas” and “stories” and “quotes,” or “doctrines” and “good deeds” and “religious ambitious works” mean

little to nothing. Plenty of people have made 50 MILLION DOLLARS A YEAR selling religion to God's elect. That is shameful. Such so-called "successes" and earthen "spirituality" mean nothing, in God's eyes, or those who know Him.

All of these 1) 2) 3) were "Vine-less", even before "disKoinonia." But, it can be confusing to those who function superficially, and just "trust" that all these "nice people" must really know God if they are hanging around the church. In daily life, this can be an "illusion" to the undiscerning, or uninvolved, or those who are immature or spiritually lazy. If some don't pay attention to the clear digression in the life of a person around them, then they can be totally confused when action needs to be taken.

If an immature parent is not alert and is not taking responsibility to love and care for their children, obviously they will be quite "surprised" when something terrible happens. The same is true in God's Family! If someone is showing signs of obsession, or love of the world, or crude earthiness, or reactionary rebellion, some could be "surprised" when someone needs to be cut off from Fellowship. If they weren't watching in care and love, they may not even notice as a person changes from innocent "immaturity"—to willful fake religion, or "using" God's Grace and relationships to fan their own appetites for "friends" or "travel" or "fun" or "child care" or "spouse-seeking" or financial help.

It's imperative that "*in the race ALL the runners run*"—there are no spectators. A KINGDOM of PRIESTS means that in this Covenant we all, "*from the least to the greatest,*" take responsibility to be "*ambassadors of Christ*" with one another, "*as if God were making His appeal through us.*" That's just basic Christianity, as we've discussed. We all need to play our part to help put each other's stubborn, dull hands into the hand of God, as best we can. And in so doing, "we have Fellowship with one another,"<sup>1</sup> too.

Let's dance His Dance, to HIS Music—and dance it well, all the days of our life<sup>2</sup>! As someone has said, "*A Revolution without dancing, is a Revolution not worth having!*"<sup>3</sup>

*Love, in the Warrior-Lamb,  
in His Blood and Spirit,  
yours in Christ,  
mike, with the church here  
www.HouseChurch.com*

---

*Chapter 18 Footnotes*

**<sup>1</sup>John 1:4-10**

---

*New International Version*

<sup>4</sup>We write this to make our joy complete. <sup>5</sup>This is the message we have heard from him and declare to you: God is light; in him there is no darkness at all. <sup>6</sup>If we claim to have fellowship with him yet walk in the darkness, we lie and do not live by the truth. <sup>7</sup>But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin.

<sup>8</sup>If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. <sup>9</sup>If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup>If we claim we have not sinned, we make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.

**<sup>2</sup>All the Days of My Life**

---

[www.HouseChurch.com/Life](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Life)

**<sup>3</sup>Songs of Love and War**

---

[www.HouseChurch.com/Songs](http://www.HouseChurch.com/Songs)